No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 571-575

Chapter 571

Quil guffawed. “Marshall Zain Yorke is going to kill you to avenge his master. I, on the other hand, am going to enjoy toying with your woman to avenge my uncle. How does it sound? My revenge plan sounds good, right?”

“Hmph. In your dreams!” Jack chuckled, though without humor in them. “You’ll surely be disappointed to know Selena won’t be kidnapped. I guarantee you that.”

“You seem confident. Do you think my bodyguards are useless? Do you think that they can’t get one simple woman?” Quil started laughing out loud.

Their exchange was then cut off when Jack’s phone rang. He looked at the caller ID and picked it up. Sure enough, it was Selena.

He turned on the loudspeaker. “Honey, are you alright?”

“Honey, I met a few men when I was on my way to work just now, and they wanted to kidnap me. They must’ve been bodyguards of some random young master. You have to be careful because they’re going to attack you!” replied Selena, anxious and fretting. “Luckily, Dennis rescued me just in time, and now I’m fine. I’m only worried about you, my mother, and the others. Are they alright?”

“Daughter, Xena and I are kidnapped!” Fiona started yelling when she heard her daughter’s voice.

The corners of Jack’s mouth twitched ever so slightly. Why did Fiona have to yell at this moment? Would that not just worry Selena?

“How could this be? Jack, Mother, and Xena are kidnapped? Who did this?” Selena grew even more anxious. She only knew that this person was utterly horrible for kidnapping Fiona and Xena.

Honestly, it was fine if they only kidnapped Xena; Selena would not even bat an eye if Xena died.

Alas, her mother was also dragged into this mess, thus her worry worsened.

“Honey, don’t worry about us,” Jack instantly spoke up in an attempt to comfort Selena, “just carry on! I’m here to protect them, and I’ve eliminated some of their men to save them both. I’ll call you after everything is settled here.”

“Alright… I’ll be waiting for your call,” Selena conceded. “You have to be careful!”

“Did you hear her? My wife is fine.” Jack grinned triumphantly the moment he hung up. “Sorry, but mission failed.”

Jack then turned to Fiona. “Don’t worry, Mother, Selena’s fine,” he quickly assured her. “I’m coming over to save you right now!”

“Alright, it’s good that Selena is safe!” Fiona began to settle down when she heard that her daughter was fine. Her only concern at the moment was whether her son-in-law could save them. Although Jack had slain countless men before, Fiona had never seen him fight in person; she was usually absent when Jack had to fight. Of course, she had only seen Jack fighting some useless thugs. This was the cause of her worry. She feared that this would be Jack’s suicide mission and was incapable of saving them.

“So Selena wasn’t captured? That’s fine.” Quil looked at Xena before walking over and pulled her to him. “This woman’s not bad, so I’ll toy with her instead!”

Chapter 572

Zain could barely stand Quil's behavior. "Take it to a place upstairs if you want to do anything; don't disturb me. I'll be here to settle this guy!"

Quil laughed at what Marshal Yorke had to say. "Alright, I'll leave this guy to you, since he's just a commander. We're going upstairs to enjoy ourselves. Surely settling a mere commander is no hard job for you!"

Quil and the others approached the stairs to the fourth floor while picking up Xena and Fiona.

"Let go of me!" Xena screamed as she struggled vehemently.

These f*cking bodyguards were no good people; they kept grabbing at her thighs as they brought her up the stairs.

"Jack, save me! If it wasn't because of you, we wouldn't be kidnapped!" Fiona shrieked. "If anything happens to me, my daughter won't let you off the hook so easily!"

"Go away, you b*stards! Go away!" Fiona was scared witless, her struggle never ceased as she was carried away. Her face turned pale from being terror-struck, and her hair was ruffled due to her struggling.

"Don't worry, I'll come soon!" Jack was slightly at ease when only two bodyguards remained at the entrance while the rest went up the stairs.

Zain was a marshall, and if Xena and Fiona saw how effortlessly he could eliminate a marshall, they would be under the suspicion that he was a King of War. It would be tedious to explain that to them. On the contrary, it would be easier to explain things when they saw nothing.

Zain looked at Jack indifferently as he commented, "Young man, you can't blame this on me. I only want to kill you to avenge my master!"

“Your master is Magnus Sutherland, right? You want to avenge a piece of trash like him?” Jack chuckled, his fists raised as he adjusted his stance. “Since my mother-in-law and Xena are in danger, my only course of action is to finish you off and save them right after.”

“Really? How dare you act all cocky when you know I’m a marshal?” Zain smirked a malicious smirk, and there was a glimmer of pure malice in his eyes. “Young man, do you think that I’m a marshal because I bribed my way there? You’re wrong. I’m already a marshal several years after I enlisted, and I earned that position with my punches. I’m not like those men who became marshals through good luck and relationship with others, or without any plausible skills!”

Zain then ceased his rambling. He took one step forward and the distance of a few meters between him and Jack disappeared just like that. The next second, he was already in front of Jack.

“That’s speedy!” The two bodyguards left guarding the entrance inhaled sharply as they watched the fight unfold. Was this the true strength of a marshal? Such strength was downright terrifying.

Zain balled his fist and dashed toward Jack in one swift movement.

While it seemed as though it was an ordinary punch, the power behind it was a force not to be reckoned with. Moreover, it was very fast. Had any normal men be at the receiving end, they would have fallen in an instant. Zain believed Jack stood no chance against this sort of power.

Yet, Jack made no move to evade. He balled his own fists and threw one punch, his fist collided against Zain’s. It was as though he had anticipated this attack.

‘Oh, so he will stand and fight?’ The thought crossed Zain’s mind the moment Jack threw his punch to fight back, and he was obviously taken aback.

“That’s so fast!” Zain then began to feel fear. Jack should not have been able to intercept his fist with his own.

He threw his punch later than Zain did, yet Jack's punch zipped through the air and met his much faster.

There was a dull, muffled noise and Zain flew backward. He knocked down a wall two or three meters away as he zipped through the air.

These walls were solidified and very thick, despite looking rather normal. The strength of a normal person would never be able to knock the wall down.

Chapter 573

Zain, luckily, was a strong and powerful marshal. With the immense strength he had developed in his heavily trained body, he managed to stand up once more. Nonetheless, the alarming impact he suffered had injured his body badly. When he stood up, his throat felt a gush of sweet liquid and he vomited blood. His face turned pale.

"How is this possible?!" The two guards were expecting to see Jack beaten into a pulp. They were not, however, ready to see Zain flying through the air with just Jack's punch, while he stood unharmed. It was as though nothing happened to Jack; he stood perfectly still.

"I—Impossible! Aren't y—you a commander?!" Zain shook his head, utterly shocked at the turnout of events.

Jack had on a menacing smirk, and he rushed at Zain like a bolt of lightning.

"This isn't good!" Zain had raised one fist when Jack caught it. Jack's other free hand grabbed onto his neck—effectively choking him—and he lifted him off of the ground in that hold.

Jack roared before smashing Zain against the floor with all his might.

The sound echoed through the air and dust from the floor rose into clouds. Zain's eyes went wide in fear as blood oozed from the back of his head.

"Y—You're not a commander… Who…who are you?" Zain spoke breathlessly. Kicking his legs weakly for the last time, he perished.

Those two bodyguards looked at each other, turned around, and were about to run away. "Aah!"

Jack then stood up, with two bricks at hand.

He threw both bricks with such power, and they bolted through the air before hitting the two guards at the back of their heads. Both bodyguards fell to the ground, dead.

…

"What's happening downstairs? You guys, go down and take a look!" Quil barked at his men when he heard the blood-curdling screams downstairs. He had just kissed Xena a few times and was about to take her clothes off.

"Yes, Young Master." Those bodyguards could only nod and walk toward the stairs, despite wanting to stay for the view.

Just as they reached the stairs, two bricks slammed into their heads. They fell as they bled.

"Young Master, t—this guy is coming up!" The bodyguards were extremely frightened when they saw Jack coming up.

Was Marshal Zain Yorke not supposed to finish Jack off? Why was this man still alive and was able to pass them?

“How’s that possible?!” Quil was just as taken aback. He never anticipated Jack would still be alive and would come up here.

Jack bolted forward, punching one bodyguard after another, his might showcased in such a petrifying manner. His body reeked with murderous intent.

Chapter 574

At this moment, Jack was like a bulldozer. The bodyguards surrounded him one after another, but they dropped like flies.

Everything happened too fast, and men were falling to the ground, dead. Some people almost had their hearts burst into pieces, while others had holes punched to their chest in an utterly gruesome manner.

“That so-called Marshal doesn’t have the fighting power as he so boldly claimed.” Jack strolled in an oddly relaxed manner, a grin on his face as he did. “He must’ve become a marshal because of his relationship with Magnus Sutherland!”

“How’s this possible? This is very bad…!” Some of the bodyguards were so frightened that their legs started trembling. In a short period of time, only 20 to 30 of them were left.

“F*ck… Could that be true?! That f*cking Zain was all conceited and pompous to me all the time, and here I thought he had what it takes. He even bragged that he could kill Jack quickly!” Fear crept onto Quil as he saw his men dying before him. He immediately took out a gun and pointed it at Xena’s head.

“Don’t move, young man. If you come any closer, I’ll kill her!” Quil gritted his teeth and said.

Jack immediately stopped walking. At this point, bodies of dead men were scattered all over the floor behind him.

“Don’t… Don’t come any closer!” Xena waved her hands in fright as the gun was pointed to her head.

She had hoped that she would be rescued, but she had no idea that this Young Master Xenos had a gun with him.

It was then when a thought occurred to her; Jack was far capable and stronger. Back then, the son of the Dragon God clan’s chief had a gun with him too, no? That man wanted to kill Jack, too, but that failed terribly. That in itself was proof of Jack’s daunting prowess. However, the current situation was different. This time, the gun was not pointing to Jack… It was pointed at her!

“F*ck. This guy managed to come up here!” Brother Octo was also frightened. He had already let go of Fiona, and Fiona was so frightened that she hid in a corner. She curled up and shivered, not wanting to see the event that was about to unfold.

The last thing they expected was for Jack to advance again.

“You… Stop right there! Aren’t you afraid that I’ll kill her?” When Quil saw Jack coming closer once more, his once settled-down heart began thumping in fear again.

“She’s told you before that she’s an outsider to the family, right? She asserted before that she’s not married into the Taylor family yet. She’s not Ben’s wife, so you can kill her if you want to. I’m fine with it!” Jack chuckled and stopped walking when he noticed a small pebble on the floor.

He had no other way to do this as he wanted to kill these people, but he could not use ways that were overly against nature. This embarrassed Jack. He had to control his fighting abilities so Xena would not equate him to the strength of marshals or Kings of War. If he came off too strong, he would not be able to hide his identity anymore.

Xena was so surprised that she immediately yelled at Jack, “Jack, what are you joking about? I’m about to marry Ben, and you don’t want to save me?! Fine, you bastard! I see you have a grudge against me!

You’re still holding onto what happened last time, right?!”

Jack merely laughed it off. “No matter what, you’re really an outsider!” He shrugged his shoulders, unfazed and uncaring.

The corners of Quil’s mouth slightly trembled. If that was the case, was the hostage in his arms useless?

When Fiona heard that Jack could not be bothered about Xena’s fate, she immediately shrieked, “Jack, save her! She’s the wife of your brother-in-law! How can you be so selfish?!”

Chapter 575

Momentarily stunned, Quil quickly recovered, and a smirk made its way on his face. “Yes, she’s an outsider, but your mother-in-law isn’t, right?”

He shifted the aim from Xena and was about to point it at Fiona—who was by the corner—to get her walking to him.

Jack had anticipated as much. Faster than anyone could blink, he kicked hard once he saw the other party move the gun away. The pebble he kicked zipped through the air and shot into Quil’s hand that held onto the gun.

“Ahh!” Quil felt a wave of extreme pain as though he was hit by a bullet, and his grip on the gun loosened by reflex.

The aim shifted away from Fiona, but as the gun slipped from his hand, he accidentally pulled on the trigger.

Bang!

A gunshot was heard. The bullet shot Brother Octo in his chest, right through his heart.

“Young Master…” Brother Octo’s head lowered ever so slowly to see the wound; blood was oozing like water. The man then fell backward as he breathed his last, and eventually, his breath left him permanently.

Everything happened so quickly, and in a split second the gun had fallen to the floor

“Aah!” Quil knelt in pain as his grip on Xena loosened.

Meanwhile, Fiona was met with the eyes of lifeless Brother Octo, who collapsed right next to her after the gunshot. Those void eyes, eyes that belonged to a dead man, made her faint.

The gunshot would have hit her; there was not much distance between the two after all.

“Aah!” Xena let out a hair-raising scream, scared witless at what was happening, and she ran to Jack.

“Quickly, run!” Not many bodyguards were left. With their confidence lost due to what had happened, they abandoned Young Master Xenos as they turned to escape.

Alas, Jack showed no mercy as he finished them off with just a few moves. Only Quil, who was still kneeling on the floor, was left alive.

Jack walked over, picked up the gun, and pointed it at Quil’s head with a small smirk.

Quil gritted his teeth as the pain slowly subsided. He looked up and discovered that none of his bodyguards were left alive while Jack had a gun to his head.

“How… How dare you? Jack, I’m telling you now: You better let go of me or you’re done!” Quil’s voice trembled, and it was as though his tongue was frozen. “You know it yourself that Sky City is very big, twice the size of Eastfield. Apart from that, it’s one of the old cities where many masters and powerful people exist.” Quil had no other plan to get away from this apart from threatening Jack. He might just survive with this. “The Xenos family is one of the biggest families among them—”

Before he could finish speaking, Jack pulled the trigger callously.

No matter how audacious Xena was, she was not able to stomach the view of Quil shot in the head. She was so frightened that her eyes rolled to the back of her head and fainted.

Jack then looked at his surroundings, dumbfounded when he saw his mother-in-law and Xena fainted on the ground. ‘Why did these two faint?’No.1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 576-580

Chapter 576

Jack was speechless when he saw the duo unconscious on the ground.

He glanced at Xena, and the intent to kill was evident in his eyes. This woman would only bring problems for as long as she lived; now would be a good chance to end it all.

He quickly dismissed the thoughts.

His lips curled into a self-deprecating smile.

If he killed an unarmed and unconscious woman, how different would he be from Quil and others like that?

He was the Supreme Warrior, too. How could he take advantage of someone while they were

defenseless? He would be the object of ridicule if others knew about that!

Moreover, the agreement between him and Ben would never be resolved if he killed her, and Jack might never know who operated behind Xena. Furthermore, Ben could spiral into severe depression should she die.

Ben loved and trusted Xena so much. What if Ben found it too much to cope with? What if he took his own life after Xena died?

The more he went over it, the more he came to terms that Xena had to live to see another day. Even if he wanted her dead, he had to wait for the day when Ben would see this woman's true colors.

He could only sigh and say, "Nevermind." Once he walked to both unconscious women, Jack slung them over his shoulders and walked to the edge of the fourth floor. He then jumped down but landed lightly and safely on the ground floor.

Jack walked outside without struggling nor breaking a sweat. Once he placed both women at the backseat, he started the engine of his car. He then entered the driver's seat and proceeded to drive straight to the family villa.

Once he entered the compound, Jack recalled that he had something important to do. He instantly called Selena and informed her that everyone was safe and sound.

Just as Jack hung up, Andrew came his way. "Hey, didn't they go shopping? What happened?" he worriedly asked as he was met with the sight of both passed-out women in the car.

"It's okay. They just fainted because they were frightened. They'll wake up soon!" Jack smiled bitterly. He never thought that they were both cowards and would faint due to the fright.

Fiona was the first to wake up; her eyes opened the moment Jack finished his sentence.

Once she noted that she was in a car and that she was already home, she relaxed. “Oh my goodness. Am… Am I at home?”

She looked at Xena, still unconscious by her side, and shook her. “Xena, are you alright? Why aren’t you moving?”

The tight smile was still on Jack’s face. “She fainted because of fright like you.”

The events that had happened rushed into Fiona’s mind at that instant, and she glared at Jack. “Everything happened because of you,” she icily accused him. “I nearly got shot back there, and I would’ve died. Thankfully, that person missed his shot. Otherwise, I wouldn’t have returned in one piece!”

Chapter 577

“What?! Jack, what actually happened?” When he heard what Fiona had to say, Andrew was staggered, thus he began to interrogate Jack.

Xena slowly regained consciousness and was just as unsettled as Fiona when she woke up. Still, she relaxed when she noted the familiar safe surroundings. “Oh my god, that was so scary! Did I faint? Are we back at home now? Where are those people?”

“Don’t worry, those people are dead,” Jack assured them. “When I said that I can save you both, it meant that I was confident to go through that promise!” Jack paused for a moment before he added, “Luckily, that marshal wasn’t very powerful. If not, it would have been difficult!”

“It’s all your fault. When did you offend people from Sky City? The Young Master Xenos said that they were from a big family in Sky City, and that city is really huge!” Fiona got down from the car, face evidently worried still. “What should we do if his family comes here looking for us?”

“Since they asked for a marshal to come fight me, it means that they’re unconfident and incapable. There’s no need to fret over this, everyone!” Jack laughed and continued saying, “How about this. Since we’re not short of money right now, let’s employ a few bodyguards. When Mother wants to go shopping in the future, have a few bodyguards by your side and it’ll be much safer. You won’t get kidnapped as easily again!”

“This sounds good! We should have employed a few bodyguards early on. Employ a few extra ones!” Xena finally came down from the car, pleased with the idea that she could bring bodyguards whenever she would leave the house in the future. She wondered how many anxious eyes she would attract.

“We’ll need a lot of money to employ bodyguards. One would take around ten to twenty thousand a month, and it’d be even more expensive if we employ a dozen bodyguards. Apart from that, we need to employ some workers to clean this place! Right now, we only have Jenny, and she has to send Kylie to school. Her alone wouldn’t be enough as this is such a big house!”

After he went through his thoughts, Fiona then spoke to Jack, “I don’t care, you should pay for this. Didn’t you say that you’re a head commander? You should have enough money still so you should pay the bodyguard’s salary!”

“Oh, don’t worry about this, Mother. I’ll cover all the expenses. You can keep the money that I’ve given to you!” Jack smiled and continued saying, “By the way, I didn’t foresee today’s incident beforehand, so I’m sorry that this has frightened you.”

“Hmph! Was it only a fright that you gave me? Xena and I almost died from fright! I don’t care; something like this shouldn’t happen again. If not, I’ll… I’ll ask Selena to divorce you…!” Fiona was so angry as she crossed her arms at her chest. “If the marshal truly was a competent soldier, Xena and I would’ve died there!”

“Mother, don’t worry. The Xenos family definitely wouldn’t come over to cause trouble again. They were asking for trouble when they pulled this stunt!” Jack nodded, and he silently agreed to a decision he made mentally.

Fiona began to relax, slowly yet surely, before she remembered something. “Oh no, I… I need to go

back." She slapped her thigh in contempt and was ready to leave. "Those people took my bracelets, cash, and watch. F*ck, I need to go get them back!"

Jack felt uneasy about his mother-in-law's thought process. "Mother, that place must've been sealed off right now. Why do you want to go back? There are dead bodies all over that place. I'm afraid that you'll faint again if you go there!"

Fiona was frightened when she heard this. Jack had a point. Would she not need to search for her money in the midst of those dead bodies? Would that be a bad omen? Would those people turn into ghosts and haunt her?

She gulped when she thought about this. She turned around and had a bitter expression on her face. "I've really lost a lot today!"

Chapter 578

After careful deliberation, Jack then suggested, "How about this: I will transfer over a million to the both of you. Take this money to help you get over the shock. How does this sound?" The amount was nothing he would fret over.

As long as Fiona stopped blaming him for today's incident, everything would be fine.

As for Xena, Jack planned to act as though he had let go of their past incident and treat this woman as his family. This way, she might put down her guard and show her true colors. Today's incident was his fault, after all.

Jack never bothered about Quil after he had killed Magnus. He thought that side characters like Quil would not dare wreak havoc due to fear after Magnus, the person he looked up to, had died.

Jack never anticipated this to backfire. Quil and the others did not know that it was him who killed Magnus, so they planned to wait for some time until everybody else forgot about Magnus' rape attempt before attacking him.

He had to credit the other party; they were very smart. They had Magnus' apprentice seeking vengeance and wanting to kill Jack.

Quil, unfortunately, took the wrong way to go about it. This man had planned to hurt Selena and Xena, and he even went as far as kidnapping Fiona as well. This only infuriated Jack.

Had they only asked Marshal Zain for this task instead of Quil, Jack might have let it slide. He might not need to look into it or investigate who ordered Zain to attack him.

"Sure! Thank you, Brother-in-law! That's very kind of you… Thank you for today!" Xena almost jumped in excitement when she heard this. This was one million, and it was no meager amount.

Never did she think she would live to see the day when Jack would give her money. It seemed that Jack was at ease with her. After all, she had been discussing her marriage with Ben.

Was Jack just joking the other night at dinner when he wanted to look at her cell-phone? Might she have been too nervous, overthought it, and misunderstood him?

Jack smiled. "Give me your account, and I'll transfer it to you right away. After all, you were kidnapped today because of me. We'll be family someday, after all, once you marry Ben. If you ever need my help in the future, just tell me!"

"Brother-in-law, you're so courteous. I'm sorry about what happened before as I—I've misunderstood you. Now that I think about it, you purposely said words that you 'didn't care about me' and that I was an 'outsider' when Young Master Xenos pointed the gun at me so that he'd shift the aim to Mother. You found the opportunity to intercept as the gun shifted aim, am I right?" Xena laughed. She pouted her delicate mouth to act affectionately sweet. "Brother-in-law, it seems like you've really gone through a lot of trouble!"

"That's what happened? Still, we're lucky you're much faster. Had you been slower, I would've been the

one shot!" Fiona patted her chest and understood why Jack claimed that it was fine even if Xena was killed. This guy said this to purposely confuse the enemy.

Jack quickly transferred a million to them both. With a smile on his face, he advised, "Mother, it's best if you guys don't go out today. Though I think it's safe, both of you were scared witless just now, so it's best if you rest well at home. I'll go to the personal security company and employ some bodyguards. You guys can wait till the bodyguards come this afternoon or tomorrow before going shopping!"

"Of course! You're my good son-in-law, and Mother listens to whatever you say. Thank you for today. If it wasn't for you, Mother and Xena would've been hurt by those bastards!"

"Sigh! It's so good to have a soldier as a son-in-law. Nothing's too dangerous when my son-in-law could rescue me no matter what!" Fiona smiled when she saw the notification text that a million was transferred into her account. The fear of death seemed to have evaporated into thin air. Instead, it was replaced with the joy of earning a fortune.

"Thank you, Brother-in-law. What you said was right. We'll officially be family in the future, and we should get along!" The overjoyed Xena gave Jack a wide grin the moment she got the money.

Chapter 579

Andrew nodded in agreement. "It's great that nothing happened. What Jack said made sense, and we do need to employ some bodyguards and workers. Now that we're rather wealthy, our house might be the target of thieves and others if we don't have bodyguards!"

Jack nodded. "Yes, Mother. You should go inside and take a rest. Your clothes are also dirty, so it's better that you take a bath and change into something else. I'll go out now to employ some bodyguards!" After talking to Fiona, Jack then left the residence and drove to a private security company.

As there were many powerful forces, families, and rich men in Eastfield, so there were many private security companies.

Jack drove around before he stopped at a random area.

There were two private security families here. One had eye-catching interior design with a big yard while the other one seemed rather quaint and ordinary-looking Jack decided and, of course, walked toward the yard with beautiful interior design without second thoughts.

As he entered through the door, he was approached by a bald man that seemed to scrutinize him. “Are you here to interview as a bodyguard?” The bald man smiled coldly. “Queue there if you’re here for an interview!”

Jack looked over to where this man pointed and saw the queue of men that lined up to register.

“I’m not here to interview for a job. I’m here to employ some bodyguards,” Jack replied, an indifferent smile on his face as he met the man’s gaze.

“You? How’s that possible?” That person sized Jack up once again and smugly replied, “I’m looking at you, and you don’t seem to be a person who can employ bodyguards. After all, you’re dressed so simply.”

As he did not want to be bothered, he shifted the conversation. “Where’s your boss? I want to talk to your boss. A person who looks down at others like you isn’t qualified to waste my time here.”

“Motherf*cker. How dare you talk to me like this?!” The bald man glared at Jack angrily. “Do you know who I am? I’m in charge of the safety here and the instructor here,” he chided. “A lot of bodyguards that I’ve trained found good jobs. Some of them went to the Clark family, and some went to the Wilson family. These are second-class aristocratic families.”

Jack cackled at the man’s attempt to intimidate him. “This has nothing to do with me. I’m here to employ bodyguards!” Jack shrugged him off as he walked away and ignored the bald man.

“Do you have a death wish? How dare you say that I look down on others and ignore me?!” The man was extremely angry. People that came here to employ bodyguards were normally rich people, and they would also give him some extra benefits when they knew he was the instructor here. This was so that he would choose better bodyguards for them.

These rich people had money, but they lacked the knowledge and understanding in things like these. He never anticipated that Jack would fight back, despite wearing regular-looking clothes. With Jack’s back turned to him, the man stretched out his arms and aimed for Jack’s neck. With his palms shaped into a tiger claw-style of Kung Fu, he went for Jack’s neck.

Chapter 580

The bald man was extraordinarily fast. Of course, it was only natural that a person who specialized in training bodyguards possessed such uncommon ability. He felt that he had to teach Jack a lesson, especially after disrespecting him in such a deplorable manner. It did not help that they had many onlookers who saw Jack disrespecting him.

“Hmph!” came the sound of indignance as he aimed for Jack with his tiger claw-style palms.

The bald man never saw it coming: Jack merely sidestepped to the left and, just like that, avoided the man’s attack. The bald man was taken aback.

“Impossible!” The bald man was surprised as his eyes widened like saucers. He quickly had the impression that he must have had a miscalculation. It was practically an ambush, and a rather fast attack at that. How did he avoid it without even turning back?

Just as he was surprised about it, Jack walked two steps forward away from him with his hands behind his back. It was as if he did not see the bald man and his steps were leisure.

Two bodyguards stood at the other side of the room, personally trained by the bald man himself. Their eyes nearly popped out of their sockets when they saw it happening. “How was that possible?” They had to be hallucinating. How could their instructor fail to catch a man who had his back turned to him?

The bald man's face darkened when he heard the exclaim from his disciples. He took two steps forward to catch up to Jack. This time, he shaped both hands in a claw-like manner and aimed for Jack.

However, Jack sidestepped to the right when he swung his left palm, and Jack would sidestep to the left when the bald man swung his right hand.

Aghast, he decided to swing both hands onto Jack

Just as he was ready to rush forward, Jack suddenly fell backward.

Not only did the bald man miss, but Jack pulled an even better surprise attack by slamming his head against the bald man's stomach!

One of Jack's legs was planted on the ground—though bent to a certain degree—while the other was raised and stretched out straight. Jack spectacularly kept his balance, and it was as though he was just as balanced as the ground. This nifty move he pulled seemed utterly flawless, though not many people could do this.

There was a dull sound that followed after Jack slammed his head against the man's stomach. The force of Jack's attack sent the man staggering a few steps backward before he could stabilize himself.

"This can't be. There's no way you can stand against me!" The bald man saw red like never before. At that point, their scuffle attracted more onlookers, even from those who queued for the interview. Understandably, this made him feel diffident.

As he let out an enraged roar, he clasped his hands together into a huge fist like a large hammer and leaped into the air. He jumped a few meters high and dropped toward Jack, anger overwhelming his being.

“I suppose you haven’t had your fill, huh?” Jack was miffed with this man’s incessant attacks. If he was a no-nonsense kind of person while he was attacked, this bald man would have been a goner in just a few seconds. Had Jack been an assistant commander-equivalent, the man would have died still.

Jack was well aware that those who ran a personal security company were backed by people of great power. He was well aware that if he was killed, it would not be a big deal. Jack balled his fist tightly, and the energy he used this time was almost two times more than the energy he used previously.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 581-585

Chapter 581

This time, Jack’s strength was too scary. His punch caused the other party to fly a dozen meters away, demolishing the walls of the yard’s entrance.

“Nngh!” The bald man vomited blood as he landed on the ground, his complexion pale.

“Who are you? How dare you cause trouble in our Harrison Private Security Company!” One after another, the people inside the office ran out after hearing all the noise.

“That’s right. Young man, you’re really daring. This is our private security company. Are you on a suicide mission? Coming here to cause trouble?” A few others also said this. Some of the apprentice bodyguards surrounded Jack.

“How is this possible? The bald instructor was hit…” One of the young men saw him standing up. His face darkened. It seemed that this young man was very strong.

The faces of some of the instructors also darkened. They finally looked at the old man.

“Head instructor, this guy wants to barge in and I can’t stop him!” the bald man said as he rubbed his chest and pointed at Jack.

“Grandfather, If I wanted to kill you just now, you wouldn’t have had the chance to stand up right now!” Jack said to everyone as he laughed and turned around. “I’m not here to cause trouble. I’m here to employ some bodyguards. I had no idea that you people would be so arrogant. I’m punishing him because he was ready to kill me when I merely commented on his attitude.”

At this moment, the old man finally spoke with a cold expression on his face, “Young man, do you think that the Harrison Private Security Company can allow you to come and go as you please? Do you think our company can operate for so many years if we were so casual?”

“That’s right, young man. And now you’re trying to run away after hitting one of our people? Are you dreaming?” another man also said coldly.

“Young man, are you afraid when you see so many of us here? Is this why you want to leave? You even said that if you wanted to kill baldy, he would’ve died just now. Bah! Who are you trying to bluff? Did you think I grew up frightened by others?” a brawny guy said with a fierce expression.

“This is only one branch of the Harrison Private Security Company. Young man, you don’t know how big our company is, right?” The bald instructor started laughing coldly. “Now, kneel in front of me. Kowtow and apologize to me. I’ll forgive you if you compensate me with five million dollars. Do you understand me?”

“Tut, tut… I don’t think this is a private security company. Your company seems to be a con-company that bullies guests just because you have many people!” Jack looked at these people and continued speaking, “I’m here to help with your business, but you guys aren’t welcoming me, even flashing me with your arrogant faces. I wonder who gave you guys the courage to do so?”

People from the private security company across the street seemed to have heard the noises. Quite a number of them came over. They watched from the entrance, wondering what was happening inside.

“It seems that somebody is here to cause trouble?” a short-haired woman said when she saw a hole on the wall at the entrance.

Chapter 582

The people from the opposite company thought that somebody was here to cause trouble. After all, everyone from this Harrison Private Security Company was extremely arrogant.

Apart from that, this company had a strong background—they were quite rich. They were envious of the people in this company as they drove many cars. Even their yard was designed beautifully.

They never thought that somebody would dare cause any trouble for them.

However, these people understood once they heard what Jack said. It seemed that these people were too arrogant and had offended a customer.

There was a saying that customers were the kings. They did not think that this bald man would look down on this person, and even attack him. However, it seemed that he was counter-attacked by Jack.

“Old Baldy, is this person really a customer here?” the old man asked after he thought about it.

The bald man immediately said, “Head instructor, don’t listen to the bullshit this man says. He’s dressed so commonly. Does he look like a person who’d be here to employ bodyguards? And he was the one who spoke to me rudely!”

“the guilty party files the suit. How dare you act so arrogantly when you’re the one who had a bad attitude and attacked me from behind?! You must be suicidal!” Jack smiled coldly. They had no idea that he had just killed a few hundred people from the Xenos family, including a strong and powerful marshal. He did not expect to meet a similar situation when he came out searching for a few bodyguards.

“arrogant bastard. How dare you come here and hurt our people, even breaking our items, without any regrets?! You dare to speak arrogantly!” The head instructor started laughing. “Do you think we’re weaklings?”

He did not want to continue speaking much so he waved his hand and said, “Attack!”

Two instructors and a dozen bodyguards immediately surrounded Jack.

“I see you still want to use your strength to mistreat people!” Jack said with an indifferent smile when he saw so many people surrounding him.

“young man, are you afraid yet? Let me tell you this, it’s too late! We’ve already given you a chance. You could’ve left if you knelt, kowtowed, and apologized with a compensation of five million. Just admit you’re unlucky you didn’t agree to it!” The bald instructor stood outside, held his fists up in front of his chest, and was ready for a show.

“You guys are just prepared to rob people of their money!” Jack held up his fists, stopped talking, and rushed forwards. He suddenly turned upside down and spun.

Several bodyguards were kicked in their chests and flew outwards.

“Nngh!” They fell to the ground and spat out blood. They could not even stand up.

Jack used a huge amount of strength this time. Although it was not enough to kill them, it was enough to make them lose their ability to fight.

“F*ck!” Both instructors immediately moved in to attack Jack.

Pitifully, they received the same ending as those bodyguards. They fell to the ground, blood trailing from the corners of their mouths.

Jack stopped, flipped his body, and stood in his spot. He smiled at the bald guy. “Since you’re the instigator of this matter, and you were still so arrogant even when I’ve held back, let me send you to hell!”

“How dare you!” The old man was surprised when he heard this. Jack’s combat ability was already stronger than his. He immediately yelled.

However, Jack appeared in front of him as if he heard nothing and punched him in his chest.

Chapter 583

“So fast!” Not only were the people of the Harrison Private Security Company surprised, but the people from the company opposite were also extremely surprised. They had been observing the scene from the entrance.

They started to wonder if it was true that such a strong person came to employ bodyguards? Did someone like him even need a bodyguard?

“No!” The bald man was not ready to fight back. He only felt a daze and Jack was already in front of him. Jack’s punch soon fell on his chest.

The bald man yelled in fear and flew away. After hitting the wall once again, he laid there—dead.

“Old man, do you want to come over and have a taste of this?” Jack did not even look at the bald man. He turned around, looked at the old man, and squinted. “I’m here to give you money but you don’t want it. Now, you’re daring enough to be on a suicide mission!”

The old man gulped. He realized his forehead was covered in a cold sweat. He knew that this person’s true power was too scary. Even if people came from the headquarters, they would not be a worthy opponent.

“Jack!” At this moment, Skyler squeezed through the crowd because he heard noises that sounded like a fight. He immediately called out in surprise when he saw the situation.

Jack slowly turned around and was embarrassed. He had no idea that it was the 8-star King of War Skyler Celestino who almost exposed his identity previously.

“It’s you!” Skyler felt warm when he saw Jack. He immediately walked in with a smile on his face.

“8-star…8-star King of War, Skyler Celestino!” As the head instructor of the Harrison Private Security Company, he knew many strong people in Eastfield. At the very least, he knew who he could offend and who he could not. He screamed in surprise when he recognized who Skyler was, his voice almost a falsetto.

“King of War, you—you know this young brother?” The head instructor gulped, bowed slightly, and walked towards Skyler, extremely respectful.

The other bodyguards were also surprised. They had no idea that the 8-star King of War would come over.

After all, he was an important person in the army.

Jack smiled coldly. When did it change from ‘young guy’ to ‘young brother’?

“Yes. This is Jack, a head commander!” Skyler nodded. He looked at the bodyguards and instructors wailing on the ground. He then saw the dead bald man. “Jack, what happened here? Why was there a fight?”

“These people don’t know how to behave correctly. I originally…” Jack told Skyler what happened in detail.

Skyler nodded. “People like that deserve to die. Nice kill! He doesn’t even know he made a mistake. How dare he ask you to kneel? And apologize and pay them five million? I think your company doesn’t want to exist anymore, correct?”

“King of War, we made a mistake. It all happened because of this bald man. He spoke nonsense and we misunderstood this young man.” The head instructor was extremely frightened. He had no idea that this guy knew the King of War. They seemed to have a good relationship. No wonder he was so strong. This guy was a head commander.

“How about this, King of War? What if we provide this young sir twenty bodyguards for five years?” The head instructor asked tentatively after thinking about it.

Chapter 584

“How is this possible? This guy just killed someone and the Harrison Private Security Company not only let him off the hook, they even apologized to him? And proposing to provide him with so many free bodyguards for so many years?” Onlookers could not help but exclaim in surprise. “The Harrison Private Security Company has always been very high and mighty. Today, they’ve become so…”

“didn’t you see what happened? Obviously, the 8-star King of War would protect this head commander. Apart from that, it was the Harrison Private Security company’s mistake. If the 8-star King of War got angry, they wouldn’t have been able to escape his wrath!”

The short-haired bodyguard laughed and said, “Well, they’ve encountered some resistance this time, and this young man has just won a big prize. If he were to employ twenty bodyguards for a year, he would’ve had to spend five million dollars. The salary for a five-year employment would cost more than twenty million. The Harrison Private Security Company will suffer a big loss. They even just lost a strong instructor!”

As their competitors, they were happy to see the Harrison Private Security Company in such a bad situation.

“Jack, how do you feel about this?” Skyler glanced at Jack, thinking he would agree to such a good offer.

The head instructor also looked at Jack, expectations written all over his face.

However, he did not anticipate that Jack would speak without much care. “It’s fine. I’d just feel insecure if I were to employ bodyguards from this company. Would they even completely obey me? They might become dawdlers by then!” He then stretched his body. “I think it’s better if I search for bodyguards elsewhere! Thank you for your help, King of War Celestino.”

Jack’s attitude toward Skyler was very casual. He seemed to communicate with Skyler like they were close friends, different from other people. Even Skyler felt that this young man was really special. His every move was no different from those of the Supreme Warrior.

Although all the head commanders were extremely respectful when they met him, he did not dislike this casual attitude from Jack. Not only did he like it, he felt comfortable about it. Jack seemed to be a person who was at the same level as he was.

Jack walked out after he finished speaking.

“Thank…thank you, young brother!” The head instructor was also stunned. They took the initiative to provide him with such a good deal just to give the King of War face. They did not think that Jack would look down on their proposal. This was a deal worth millions, and it was rejected just like this. This person had an extraordinarily imposing manner.

Apart from that, this person had a King of War’s attitude. He was not very respectful to King of War Celestino.

Skyler stood there with a frown. He thought about it and followed after Jack.

“Jack, wait for me!” Skyler caught up to Jack and smiled at him. “I don’t know why, but when I look at

you, you look extremely similar to the Supreme Warrior I met previously!”

Jack was speechless. He looked toward a small alley on the opposite side of the road and said, “Come with me!”

Skyler followed behind Jack, wondering what was going on.

Chapter 585

After they reached the alley, Jack looked around to see if anyone followed them before speaking seriously. “In the future, stop mentioning how much I look like the Supreme Warrior. I just want a normal life and don’t want to be disturbed!”

After he finished speaking, he turned over his palm and presented a black-color token. The token looked domineering and there was a dragon totem on it.

Jack immediately kept the token away after Skyler took a look.

Skyler took a sharp breath after he saw the token. He immediately knelt. “King of War Skyler Celestino greets the Supreme Warrior and thanks you for saving me years ago. My apprentices, subordinates, and I intended to repay the Supreme Warrior, but we never got the chance all these years. I’ve been dreaming about meeting you, and now dreams have finally come true!”

Skyler’s eyes were red when he raised his head again. Years ago, Jack not only saved his life, but he also saved the lives of his subordinates and a few of his apprentices.

Jack was surprised, but he understood Skyler’s feelings. He helped Skyler up. “Why don’t you stand up first. If others see you doing this, I’ll get into trouble! In the future, don’t address me as the Supreme Warrior. You can just call me Jack!”

“Alright, I understand!” Skyler finally understood something and smiled in embarrassment. “I’m sorry about the other day. I was too stupid and almost exposed your identity. Luckily, the Goddess of War helped explain everything on your behalf. I really thought you looked like the Supreme Warrior, and over the last few days, I was actually wondering how two people could look so alike.”

“Okay!” Jack nodded. “Alright, I still need to employ some bodyguards so must go. Let’s have a drink together when we’re free!”

“Wait!” Skyler immediately rushed toward Jack when he had just taken two steps forward. “Supreme Warrior, why do you still need to search for bodyguards? I have many of them with me! Many of my apprentices and subordinates keep complaining that they have nothing to do. I can just ask them to be your bodyguards. Money wouldn’t be an issue as they’ve been wanting to repay you for so long. They’d be willing to do it without a cent if they knew they’d be working for you!”

Jack was speechless. However, if these people truly worked as his bodyguards, their combat ability would be quite reliable. On top of that, he would not need to employ as many people.

After seeing Skyler’s anticipation, Jack nodded after he thought about it. “Alright, ask them if they’d be willing to work for me. They can come over if they do. However, I can only pay each of them a moderate salary of two thousand per month if they work with me as people might wonder if my expenses are so high. The most important point for them to obey is that they have to keep my identity a secret!”

“Sure, sure, sure! I’ll go back and inform them right now! You’re too generous for even giving them a salary. After all, you saved our lives years ago!” Skyler was extremely happy when Jack agreed to his suggestion. He finally had a chance to repay Jack.

He could not help himself from smiling in embarrassment. “They’re not the only ones. I’d also like to be your bodyguard and repay you!”

Jack quickly waved his hand. “Don’t, are you trying to frighten me? You can come to my house and have drinks with me. Just say that you’re visiting your subordinates as an excuse. Wouldn’t it just reveal that I’m the Supreme Warrior if you become my bodyguard? You’re an important person, so you should use this time to rest well!”

“alright! I understand what you’re trying to say. In the future, I’ll address you as Head Commander Jack White in public!” Skyler laughed and sent Jack out. “I’ll go back and let them know about this. Will fifty people be enough?”No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 586-590

Chapter 586

What Skyler said caused Jack’s mouth to twitch at its corners. 50 bodyguards meant that the salary for one year would be around tens of millions.

He smiled bitterly and said, “We won’t need so many people as I’m not employing bodyguards for the entire Taylor family. I only need a few people to protect my small family—just a few who are good in martial arts—that’d be more than enough. My father and mother-in-law might not be used to it if there are too many of them!”

Jack thought about it before saying, “Ten. Ten would be enough!”

“Alright, ten it is!” Skyler nodded and promised Jack. “Iit’s been extremely boring recently. I loved going out on battles when we were on the battlefield. It was so thrilling to kill the enemy. Now that I’m back here, there’s nothing I can do. All I have is money, and I can only drink or enjoy entertainment activities with my subordinates. I’m so afraid I’ll meet some rich young masters whenever I leave the house. Once they recognize me, they’d come forward to try and please me by inviting me to their karaoke sessions or other activities. F*cking hell, it’s so annoying!”

Jack could not help but laugh when he heard what Skyler said. “I’m very afraid of these things. If people knew I’m the Supreme Warrior, it wouldn’t only be those rich young masters. All sorts of people—like most of the soldiers, some of the assistant commanders, even the head commanders—they would also come for me. That’d be extremely annoying! My current life is much more comfortable!”

“You’re really intelligent to have anticipated this from the start. I really admire you!” Skyler had an envious expression on his face. “A few days ago, several marriage agencies approached me, saying that they wanted to introduce some women to me. I’m f*cking married so I immediately rejected them, yet

they still didn't give up and wanted to find a second wife for me. They're just normal people so it wouldn't feel right if I hit them!"

Jack once again laughed when he heard this. "Just like that apprentice of mine, she seldom leaves the house!"

"Apprentice?" Skyler was stunned. Not many people knew that the Nine Great Gods of War were his apprentices, including Skyler. He only knew that Jack had nine subordinates as the Nine Great Gods of War had great military achievements."

He was stunned for a short moment before he spoke in realization, "Do… Do you mean the Goddess of War? She… She was your apprentice?"

Jack was embarrassed. He had no idea that he would leak this secret in the middle of a happy conversation.

He spoke lightly when he saw that no outsiders were around. "Don't tell the others, but all the Nine Great Gods of War were my apprentices. Ethan Hays learned his medical skills, among other things, from me."

Skyler took another sharp breath. F*cking hell, he had no idea that the Supreme Warrior had such a close relationship with the Nine Great Gods of War. Very few people knew about this. How big would this issue be if the people of Daxia knew about this? The scary prestige of the Supreme Warrior would once again come alive. Many people that felt they had talent would ask Jack to be their master.

There was a time when people liked having apprentices. Many Kings of War, and even Gods of War, took on apprentices, but they've never heard news of the Supreme Warrior having apprentices of his own. Everybody could only wonder if he did.

Now, Skyler discovered that his apprentices were the Nine Great Gods of War!

Jack soon got into his car and was prepared to leave. However, he remembered something and said to Skyler, who was standing nearby, “Oh yes, King of War Celestino, are you bored right now? Do you want me to give you something to do?”

“Yes, I’m so bored! I’d be so thankful! Just tell me what you need my help for!” Skyler immediately laughed happily after he heard this. He felt that if he continued down this road of nothingness, he would be so bored that mushrooms would start growing on his body.

“The son of the Xenos family from the Sky City is called Quil Xenos. He recently provoked me by trying to kidnap my wife and my mother-in-law. I killed Quil and his subordinates, but I don’t have time to deal with the Xenos family. I can only ask you to help me deal with the Xenos family!”

Chapter 587

Jack thought about it and said, “They’re not a small family. I’m afraid that they’re fearless enough to trouble me again and affect my life!”

Skyler balled his hands into fists when he heard that. “F*ck, these ignorant people. How dare they think about kidnapping your wife! The Xenos family shouldn’t exist anymore!”

Jack nodded. “Don’t be too extreme. Just kill their martial artists and family master. The maids and other workers are innocent, so let them go!”

“Alright!” Skyler nodded. He thought about it and said, “But if this family is exterminated, what about their properties? They have so many!”

“Just sell them off for a low price. Try to get more cash. We can donate half of it to charity and share the other half equally. Just transfer it into my account!” Jack said after contemplating his decision for a bit.

“Alright, let’s do this!” Skyler said happily. “It’s been a long time since I’ve fought and I’ve been longing for it.”

Skyler soon left after they finished speaking. Jack also drove away to employ maids, chefs, and other cleaning workers.

Skyler was very happy when he left. He knew now that the son-in-law who married into the Taylor family was actually his benefactor, the Supreme Warrior, who he had been searching for over the last few years. Not only did he meet the Supreme Warrior, he even had a long conversation with him. This was the biggest honor in his life.

The most important point was that the Supreme Warrior asked for his help. This meant that he could finally do something for his benefactor. The more he thought about it, the more excited he got.

When he returned to his house, several of his disciples were chit-chatting in his yard. They were stunned when they saw Skyler's happy expression.

"What's going on? Did he just win five million from the lottery tickets he bought? Why's he so happy?" A young woman among them could not help but mumble.

"How's that possible? Five million is a small amount to our master, it's nothing. Apart from that, our master is not a person who loves money!" Another man shook his head. "Could he have just met someone he liked, and that person likes him, too? If that's not the case, I can't think of anything else that'd make him so happy."

"What nonsense are you guys speaking about? Am I old? I'm only forty-something years old!" Skyler glanced at them after he heard what they said. He then continued speaking, "Ask my subordinates and the marshals I know to come over. Hmmm, and it's better if they're women. Female bodyguards are easier to be ignored by others. That'd be better!"

"Female bodyguards?" The disciples looked puzzled. What was going on?

Chapter 588

“Go, go, go. It’s a good thing, so go quickly. You guys would be honored if you get the opportunity to be this bodyguard!” Skyler immediately said to his disciples, waving his hand.

“How’s that possible? Which family are we guarding? So awesome?” The female disciple smiled slightly, thinking that her master would not mess with her. She said, “Master, can I book a spot? Didn’t you say that it’s better if the bodyguards are women?”

Skyler agreed to it after he thought about it. “Hold on, it’s better if you don’t go first. Let’s find some female subordinates who have high combat skills. List ten people down, and it’s better if they’re female bodyguards. This way, it’d be very puzzling and it’d be much more convenient for them to accompany Jack’s wife during shopping and other things!”

“No way, they only want women? Don’t we get a chance?” A male disciple’s face darkened after he heard this. His master’s manner of expression seemed to be saying that this was a good matter, but it would not be his.

“Why haven’t you answered me? I’m your outstanding disciple, you need to take care of me!” The female disciple pouted her red lips. “I’m so free with nothing to do. Working as a bodyguard might be fun!”

“Junior, working as a bodyguard is not as simple as you think it is. When you’re free, you’d still need to patrol the grounds or do other things. Do you think it’s fun when the weather is so hot? I think it’d be better to hand over such a difficult job to me!” The male disciple immediately said with a laugh, seemingly frivolous.

“Humph, haven’t we encountered all sorts of environments when we were on the battlefield? Didn’t we encounter all sorts of weather? Senior, just be straightforward and say you’re trying to snatch this position. Frankly, I wouldn’t give you the position anyway since our master said it’s a good job. I’ll definitely strive for it!” the female disciple humphed and said arrogantly.

“Alright, I’ll give you a spot! We still need to think of another dozen good fighters. It’s fine as long as they’re women. Ladies first, gentlemen next!” Skyler nodded and said.

“Great! Master, don’t forget what you’ve promised me!” The female disciple was immediately thrilled. Soon, they managed to get a dozen people to come over to the yard. They were all female veterans.

These female veterans not only looked valiant, their figures and appearances were quite nice as well. Though they were wearing normal clothes and not their army uniforms, they exuded a special temperament when they stood there.

“King of War Celestino, did you call for me?” one of the girls asked, unaware of the situation.

“A friend of mine has asked me to help him find ten bodyguards. After thinking about it, I thought giving him female bodyguards would be better,” Skyler coughed twice before saying. “Elaine has taken up one of the positions, but I still need nine other people. I’ll choose among you, so who’s willing to work as a bodyguard? The salary is not high, only two thousand a month each, so some of you might look down on it. However, this is a great opportunity!” Skyler did not explain much, but he still gave them hints.

“Bodyguards!” Some of them were unwilling when they heard that this was a job as a normal bodyguard. On top of that, the salary was quite low. Some of them here were commanders. There were also marshals. After returning from the battlefield, the country gave them quite a big amount of rewards, so they did not feel that a job—that would only pay them two thousand a month—was all that important.

“I want to go!” one of the girls said as she raised her hand and stepped forward.

“Okay, come over and stand with Elaine!” Skyler nodded in satisfaction. “There are eight more positions!”

“How’s that possible, Miss Orchid’s going too? She’s a major and she’s willing to work for two thousand a month?” A lady frowned and wondered if she had made a mistake.

She looked at Orchid Yames and gritted her teeth. “Me, count me in!”

She believed that if Orchid was willing to do it, it might truly be a good thing.

Chapter 589

“Miss Orchid, why do you want to go?” she asked lightly as she walked over to Orchid’s side.

Orchid stretched her head over and said softly, “Elaine is the King of War’s disciple. If she asked for a position, it must be a good thing. I suspect that we’re going to work as the Goddess of War’s bodyguards. If that’s the case, it’d be more convenient if we were to stay by the Goddess of War’s side. If not, why would they ask for female bodyguards?”

The girl was happy after she heard this. That sounded about right. There was a big possibility that they’d be working for the Goddess of War if they asked for women. Apart from that, would King of War Celestino be so eager to help if it was not for the Goddess of War?

Other people started raising their hands when they saw that there were three people. Soon, all ten positions were taken.

“Alright, everybody else can go back. Thank you all for coming over!” Skyler asked the others to leave first.

After they had all left, he said to these ten girls, “Let’s go to my room and I’ll tell you all about the situation!”

Once they had all entered the room, Skyler closed the door behind him.

“Master, can you tell us who we’re working for now? You said it’s a good job!” Elaine immediately said with a smile.

“King of War Celestino, let me guess. Are we working for the Goddess of War? I’ve made this guess for a while now!” The female major named Orchid Yames could not help but start laughing.

“you’re quite good at making guesses!” Skyler laughed and said.

“That’s for sure. did I guess correctly?” Orchid started laughing.

“Yes, the direction is correct, but not quite. Why don’t you continue guessing?” Skyler told them.

“How’s that possible? It’s not the Goddess of War?” Orchid was slightly disappointed. However, she had already agreed to this job. She had no other choice but to follow through.

“If it’s not the Goddess of War, then who would it be? Not many people can get our King of War to help them!” Another woman frowned, unable to understand this.

“I told you guys to go up the path. Go up the path guys. Why can’t you all understand?” Skyler was speechless as his hints were so obvious. He did not expect that Orchid and the others would still struggle to understand.

“It’s not the Goddess of War, but we need to think higher? Could it be…” Orchid frowned and soon smiled bitterly. “Could it be the Supreme Warrior?”

“That’s right!” Skyler smiled indifferently. “The person who’s looking to hire bodyguards is the Supreme Warrior. The one and only strongest person in our Daxia army, the Supreme Warrior!”

The ten girls in front of him took sharp breaths of fright when they heard this. They had no idea that it was the Supreme Warrior who was looking for bodyguards.

Chapter 590

“Oh my god, it’s actually true? It’s the Supreme Warrior? He saved my life previously!” Elaine jumped up in excitement. “I’ve never seen him in person. I didn’t think I’d get to see the Supreme Warrior’s elegant demeanor with my very own eyes!”

“Yes! It’s the Supreme Warrior. Luckily, I decided to become one of the ten bodyguards. If not, I would’ve definitely regretted it. It’s such an honor to be able to become his bodyguard and service him!” Orchid’s eyes lit up with happiness. She was a female major and right now, she had turned into a fan. “I’d die willingly if I could stay by the Supreme Warrior’s side and see his true appearance!”

Another girl blushed. “It’d be even better if we could bathe and sleep with the Supreme Warrior!”

“What are you guys saying? You guys are there to work as bodyguards. I’m not asking you to be his maid and accompany him on his bed!” Skyler was speechless. He had no idea that these people would have such extreme reactions after learning that they were going to work as the Supreme Warrior’s bodyguards.

However, he thought about how excited he was when he discovered Jack was the Supreme Warrior, and that he was a King of War at a certain age. He also took some time before he managed to calm down himself which was not too long ago. It was normal for these twenty-something-year-old girls to be excited.

The Supreme Warrior was idolized by all soldiers. It had already reached a point where they blindly idolized him. How could the girls not be excited once they knew that they would be working as the Supreme Warrior’s bodyguards?

“Great! I wonder what the Supreme Warrior looks like. Is he handsome? Is he married? Who is he? Is he in Eastfield? Why didn’t we hear about this previously?”

“Oh my god, has he just reached this place? Why haven’t we heard about this? What’s his name? We only know that he’s the Supreme Warrior!” Another girl was so excited, she almost went crazy. She paced back and forth, occasionally jumping in excitement.

“Stop, stop! I’m not asking you people to go on dates. Why are you all so excited? You’re there to work as bodyguards! Bodyguards!” Skyler was speechless. He wondered if it was a good idea to let these women work as Jack’s bodyguards. Would it affect the Supreme Warrior’s normal life?

“Master, you’re the best! How do you know him? Oh my god, I’m going to be the Supreme Warrior’s bodyguard? Oh my god, I can boast about this for an entire lifetime!” the young girl, known as Elaine, yelled in excitement. The ten pretty women in front of him seemed to have gone crazy. These ladies may not be as pretty as Selena and the rest, but they were still quite pretty. It seemed to be a team of pretty ladies.

Apart from that, quite a few of them were commanders, with two of them being marshals. Such combat ability was incredibly scary.

The combat ability of his disciple, Elaine, was also quite high. Although she did not get the position of a commander or a marshal, her combat ability was true. She never liked those positions, so she gave it to the others. The army never gave it to her, too.

“Nevermind, you guys have too many questions. I’m giving you all ten minutes to be excited. I’ll answer the questions one by one once you’ve all accepted this matter and calmed down!” Skyler was speechless when he watched these excited young people. He sat in his chair and took a cigarette out. He started smoking.

The women were very excited, only managing to calm down after some time.

“Master, tell us quickly. Did he just arrive or has he always been in Eastfield?” Elaine asked in anticipation.

“He has always been in Eastfield!”No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 591-595

Chapter 591

“Anyway, only you need to know what happened today. Please keep it a secret. The Lord Supreme Warrior did not announce his identity earlier because he just wanted to live a life of peace,” said Skyler Celestino

A girl who wanted to sleep with the Lord Supreme Warrior raised her hand immediately and exclaimed, “Don’t worry at all, we hope Lord Supreme Warrior can live a peaceful life, free from worries. We’ll definitely keep it a secret!”

“Don’t get any ideas. Lord Supreme Warrior is married now. Even his children are not young anymore. This is the most important reason for wanting to live a peaceful life!” Skyler sighed lightly and turned to everyone. “He is now the son-in-law of the Taylor family!”

“Jack White!” At that moment, Elaine understood it instantly. She had gone to Old Master Taylor’s birthday to join in on the fun. She went to the party alone and pretended not to know Skyler Celestino.

The truth was that she knew exactly what happened that day.

“Oh my god. It turns out that he really is the Supreme Warrior, and the God of War only said what he had said that day deliberately to help the Supreme Warrior conceal his identity!”

Elaine finally understood this, and she felt her heart well up with deep emotions. She said, “He’s the son -in-law of that family. Not to mention, he’s also really handsome. I never thought he’d actually be the Supreme Warrior!”

“We’re leaving this place in a moment. Just remember, you must all forget everything that happened just now. He’s your master, and you’re the bodyguards of his family!” said Skyler. He urged further, “I promised him to keep this a secret, so all of you must swear to take this to your grave. Additionally, the people you have to protect are his daughter, father-in-law, mother-in-law, and his family members. The Supreme Warrior essentially does not need your protection. I cannot even begin to imagine his capabilities!”

“Yes, master. Don’t worry. We’ll keep this a secret!” Elaine excitedly remarked, “Oh yes, when will we go over?”

“Of course it would be better to be earlier. Heavens, being a bodyguard for the Supreme Warrior is too exciting. There’s truly no better job than this!”

“Why do you even need to pay wages? I don’t lack money, I don’t even need my wages!” Orchid said passionately, brimming with enthusiasm.

Skyler Celestino heard this and became speechless. “Since you’re all behaving like idiots, we definitely cannot go over right now. Wait until the afternoon. You’ll all need to prepare a change of clothes before departing, amongst other things. As for your salary, I insist that you have it. The market price as of this moment is between one to two thousand a month. Unless you’re extremely capable, a salary of two thousand a month should suffice. Just take it!”

Elaine laughed instantly, “Yeah, Miss Orchid. If you don’t take your salary, it’d be even more suspicious, especially since you’re a Major who’s acting as a bodyguard to a man who, what more, seems to be dependent on his wife? We need to help him keep it a secret and not arouse suspicion!”

“Okay, fine. Then we’ll get home and pack up. Let’s meet at the outer gates at two in the afternoon and leave together. How about that?” said Orchid respectfully.

“Two in the afternoon? Wouldn’t that be a little too late? I can’t wait!” the girl from earlier who wanted to sleep with the Supreme Warrior passionately exclaimed, her eyes still star-studded and hopeful.

Chapter 592

At two in the afternoon, Jack arrived home.

Five to six maids, the cleaners, the cook, and four security guards from both shifts were already standing in the yard. There were at least a dozen of them.

After a round of introductions, Jack looked at Fiona and asked, “What now? Almost time, right?”

“Yes, that’s correct!” Fiona nodded satisfactorily. It was the first time she felt like a boss—she would be able to instruct servants in the future! She had not felt this way in more than five years.

“Oh, all you must listen to Jenny’s instructions in the future, alright?” After some thought, Jack said to the servants, “In the future, Jenny will let you know how much you should be paid, and she’ll also be instructing you to go to the market as well as other tasks.”

“Me?” Jenny was surprised at the flattery.

Fiona nodded. “Yes, you’ll be the head housekeeper. As for your salary, I’ll double it!” she said seriously.

“Yes, Master!” Jenny nodded, her heart filled with glee. She felt that she had made the right decision and followed the right master. “Thank you again, master!”

“Ah, you’re welcome!” Jack said happily.

“Hang on, Jack, you just hired a few security guards to watch the home. What about a bodyguard? The bodyguard is very important. Without a bodyguard, what would I do if I ran into some gangsters? What if they rob me of my belongings? I’m still thinking about my jade bracelet and all the money that I was robbed of. I still feel really uncomfortable!” Fiona remembered the past and said unhappily, “Is it because you found that bodyguard salaries are not cheap, so you’re reluctant to hire one?”

Jack felt ashamed and quickly explained, “Mother, please don’t worry, that’s not true. I’ll go find one today. I actually went to look for one today, but I found that the security companies are not that reliable. I’ve already asked someone to help find me a reliable bodyguard. They should send someone in the afternoon today or tomorrow!”

Fiona thought about Jack's reply. "It's good that you think that. Don't hire too many people. There are only so many of us, and we won't be going out often. Just about a dozen would do!"

Joan was indeed a little reluctant to spend the money. She turned to Jack and asserted, "Jack, a penny saved is a penny earned. Based on my estimates, you don't have that much money. Salaries take some time to be paid. If you get a dozen bodyguards, wouldn't that cost you a fair bit of money?"

As soon as Fiona heard this, she became unhappy and her facial expressions sank. "Dear in-law, it's already economical to hire just a dozen bodyguards. For this month, what would paying their salaries cost him? It'll just be a few hundred thousand. This isn't a big deal at all. Jack's salary is already twenty million a month. Isn't that sufficient? We're the type of people who live in large villas. In the future, what needs to be spent should be spent. Don't let your judgment be constrained by the street sweeper's salary you used to earn, alright?"

She turned to Joan. "You, look at you. You keep wearing the same few clothes that Jack bought you. Can't you buy more? Change your outfit more often. In a single week, shouldn't you have at least a set of clothes each day? With your disheveled look, I'll feel too ashamed to introduce my rich friends to you!

Joan smiled awkwardly. "Dear in-law, you may feel this way. However, I still think we need to plan carefully. Furthermore, my son will only receive his first month's salary in another two days. In the meantime, let's spend wisely!"

Jack, observing the exchange, looked at his mother with a bad feeling in his heart. It was true that his mother never had any demands or requests. She was a woman who had grown accustomed to hard times and hence, made thriftiness her way of life. She had never asked him for money.

He thought, 'What little money I'd given her before, she most likely hasn't spent it all.'

However, as a son, he no longer lacked money. In fact, calling him wealthy would not even be an exaggeration.

Had he missed something here?

Chapter 593

After all, they were not living in those times anymore. His mother was getting older and she deserved to enjoy a good life. At the very least, she did not need to behave as frugally as she did before. “Mother, your in-law is right. You’re too frugal. Don’t hesitate to buy anything you want. We’re not living in the old times. Tell you what, I’ll be free this afternoon. Let me take you out for a ride and buy you some clothes, jewelry, anything!”

“My son, I don’t need those things. Now that I eat well, dress well, and live well, I’m already very satisfied!” Joan said hurriedly. To be able to see her son accomplish all that he has today had already made her feel satisfied. Just a few years ago, the only thing she ever dreamed and hoped for was for Jack to come home safely from the battlefield. Lucky for her, her dreams came true. Not only did he come home safely, he even managed to come home as a decorated and accomplished man. Fate had been kind to her and treated her well these past years.

“Mother, what are you saying? We’re no longer short of money, so we should buy you some clothes or something!” Jack insisted with a smile.

“That’s right, you should dress up more so that you can adapt to the life of the rich!” Fiona said happily.

“Okay, Jenny. Do guide the staff and prepare the accommodations,” Jack instructed Jenny after some thought.

“Yes, master!” Jenny nodded and left with the staff quickly.

Just as they left, ten young women drove up to the villa and stopped at the clearing next to it.

“Why are there so many women here?” Andrew looked at what was happening below and was stunned.

“Why are they all women, and why are all the cars so expensive?” Fiona looked at the cars and felt ashamed, thinking to herself that these women had come to the wrong place by accident.

“Do you guys see him? That’s the handsome young man we’re looking for!” Elaine laughingly said to her peers as she recognized Jack.

“Oh, so that’s him. He is indeed handsome! To be his bodyguard is really my fortune. Even if he’s married, he’s such an eye candy!” another girl exclaimed.

Jack waited for the party to walk up to him before asking them suspiciously, “And…you are?” In reality, though, he could already guess who they were.

“Hey! I’m Elaine!”

“I’m Orchid!”

“I’m…”

The ten girls stood in a row and introduced themselves one after another.

After the individual introductions, the ten of them chimed in unison, “We’re the Taylor family bodyguards!”

Jack felt embarrassed. He thought to himself, what the hell was Skyler doing? He asked for ten bodyguards, not ten female bodyguards, let alone ten beautiful female bodyguards—was this a beauty pageant or a group of bodyguards?

Chapter 594

“Bodyguards?” When Fiona heard this, her expression sank. She glared at Jack angrily, huffing and puffing. “Jack, are you going for a beauty pageant? What kind of bodyguards are these? They all look like

flowers and jewels, how can they be bodyguards?”

Jack was speechless. He did not know how to explain himself and could only smile bitterly. “Mother, I asked my friend to help me find a bodyguard. I didn’t express a preference for males or females, and I didn’t expect that he’d choose an all-female bodyguard squad for me!”

Upon hearing this, Elaine felt unjustified. Personally, she was afraid that Jack would get rid of them.

She gave it some thought and went forward to express her sentiments. “What’s wrong with women? You shouldn’t look down on women. We’re all female heroes who’ve brought glory to the country. If the country trusts us to defend her, what makes you think we can’t defend you?”

As soon as she finished speaking, she couldn’t resist stealing a glance at Jack. “If you weren’t so handsome, we wouldn’t have come!”

Elaine was not just referring to Jack’s natural good looks, she was also referring to his presence and aura.

Fiona got so angry when she heard Elaine’s little outburst. “Look here, their comments are all about how handsome you are. These women are just decorative vases!” She continued, “All of you, leave. We don’t need decorative vases in our home as bodyguards. What use is it to have all of you here? I don’t have a good impression of Jack’s friend. He must’ve known we’re rich so that’s why he recommended all these women to Jack!”

Jack was embarrassed to hear Fiona’s unsophisticated comments. He thought to himself, ‘How terrible it was of Fiona when Sharon George came. She didn’t make these comments just because she knew how rich her family was. Just because these women’s backgrounds are probably incomparable to Sharon George’s, how can she judge these women before getting to know their capabilities and kick them to the curb?’

When Elaine heard that she was about to be driven away, she was a little worried. It was already hard for them to get to this point, what more getting the opportunity to see the face of the Supreme Warrior.

If she kicked to the curb, she would be so disappointed. To make matters worse, she would probably be ridiculed when she went back.

Stepping in swiftly, she quipped, “Who says we’re not good at what we do? If that was true, how can we even be bodyguards? How can we defend the national security of our beloved country?”

Orchid heard this and immediately stepped forward to hold Elaine back. She smiled at Jack and said diplomatically. “Master, the truth is, Skylar felt that it would be better to assign your family with female bodyguards to protect your entire family who are primarily females. Your wife, your mother, and your mother-in-law are all women, so he only had their convenience in mind. For example, if we were to go shopping with them, it would attract much less attention than having male bodyguards!”

“Oh, is that the case?” Jack came to his senses. “Actually, it does sound workable!”

He turned to Fiona. “Mother, since they’re all here, let’s just carry on and let them be our bodyguards. The weather is really hot right now, it’s not nice letting them come all this way for nothing!”

Elaine immediately stepped forward. “Yes, yes, yes. Big sister, you look like a classy person. You don’t seem to be the petty type at all. You definitely wouldn’t be too calculative with us, am I right?

“You’re calling me ‘big sister’?”

Fiona heard this and suddenly felt really flattered and happy. She thought that her daily efforts of dolling herself up had paid off. Indeed, she felt that she did not look old. Additionally, if she was not considered beautiful, why would those lowlifes who kidnapped her that afternoon dare to violate her beauty?

The more she thought, she started to feel as if she had eaten a spoonful of the sweetest honey. She smiled and said, “Alright, since you little ladies do have some good insight, I won’t drive you away. I’ll give you all a chance!”

Elaine heard this and felt gleeful. She thought, ‘Ah, so this old auntie likes compliments about her youthfulness.’

At the same time, she said, “Really? Big sister, you’ll give us a chance? Do treat us little sisters nicely! We’re not here just because your son-in-law is handsome. We just heard that your family has money and that you can afford to pay us wages of two thousand a month each. We’re all very enticed by this offer, so that’s why we’re here! Plus, we also heard that Miss Selena from your family is the most beautiful girl in the entire province and that when her mother was young, she was also a great beauty herself!”

“Oho, really? Her mother is me!” At this point, Fiona was really happy. She laughed relaxedly, “Actually, you can call me auntie. Although I look young and tender, I’m really not that young!”

Jack observed the entire exchange and was dumbfounded. He thought, ‘How could this be possible?’

Chapter 595

Jack thought that the fact that these girls were driving such nice cars meant that they neither needed nor lacked money. He thought that it was odd that they were here just for a wage of two thousand a month.

As for his mother-in-law, he was rendered speechless by how she caved in just because a couple of twenty-something-year-olds called her ‘big sister’. In fact, it looked like Elaine was even younger than Selena.

“Alright, this is my first time seeing such a youthful auntie!” Elaine said cheekily.

“This girl is so sweet-mouthed. Since you’re our bodyguard now, I don’t want to unnecessarily complicate your life. Just show me what you’re capable of. For example, you can spar and show me if you can do a backflip. If I feel like your performance is okay, then stay!”

Fiona was so happy that she did not want to make life any harder for the young women.

Unexpectedly, Elaine said, “That’s way too simple. We should perform something that has a little more difficulty!” As soon as she finished her remark, she walked to the corner of a nearby wall, picked up a red brick, and asked Orchid to hold it up high in her hands.

“Don’t tell me you’re planning to split the bricks?” Fiona swallowed. She thought that if the ladies could do this, it would be really impressive. She knew that not many bodyguards would be able to do something like that.

“Ah!”

Elaine stepped forward lithely, using one hand as a knife, and slashed the brick with one arm. Sure enough, the brick split into two right down the middle. “Beautiful auntie, how’s that? By the way, I find all these acts way too easy for me! Now do you think I can protect you?”

Sure enough, that piece of brick was split in half. “Auntie Beauty, how about it? These are all trivial, but is it enough to protect you?”

“Yes, yes, you can. You silly girl, you look so delicate and tender. I didn’t expect you to be so amazing!” Fiona was already up in seventh heaven after being served so many compliments by Elaine. At this point, Elaine was already the apple of her eye.

“Auntie, do you want the nine of us to all split a brick for you?” Orchid looked around her, she could not even find that many bricks.

“No need! I believe you now. Looks like I really lucked out this time!”

Fiona waved her hand, looking at Jack, and laughingly said, “Your friend truly picked some capable bodyguards. Furthermore, these ladies can go shopping with us and even help us pick out clothes!”

Jack did not know if he should laugh or cry. He could not believe that just a while ago, she almost kicked these women to the curb, and now she had changed her mind so fast. 'These women are just really strange creatures!' he thought.

"Mother, didn't you say earlier that women bodyguards aren't good enough? They aren't my pick!" Jack bitterly smiled and said to her on the side, "If you don't like them, I can just ask for men!"

"No way, men will not be able to follow us on our shopping trips. That's not convenient! I think these women are pretty good!" said Fiona sternly. She saw Jenny coming and immediately waved at her. "Jenny, the bodyguards are here. Take them with you and arrange their accommodation. They need to have a good rest so I can take a few of them out shopping with me tomorrow, and they can protect my safety!"No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 596-600

Chapter 596

Jack looked at the outfits of some of the girls and felt a bit of a headache coming. He said, "Since you're all our bodyguards, you'll need to maintain your appearances and wear uniforms. I'm afraid clothes like short skirts are inappropriate."

"Hey, kid, why are you so restrictive. Shouldn't girls have their own personalities? I like the way they dress! All of them have beautiful, fair, and long legs. What's wrong? It looks good that way!" Fiona butted in unexpectedly. She continued, "This way, others won't be able to tell that they're bodyguards. They'll be like plain-clothed policemen. Isn't this much better? I don't fancy having a large group of uniformed bodyguards following me. It draws too much attention!"

Fortunately, Orchid stood up this moment and said, "Auntie, don't worry. We've already discussed this while on the way here. We do think that we need to get uniforms so we look more proper. However, we also don't need to wear formal clothes. We've already thought of what to wear! We can wear summer jeans, white sneakers, and a white shirt. We're thinking of having the Taylor family emblem on our shirts. How does that sound?"

Fiona thought about it and said, "Oh, that sounds good. It'll look good, and it's also a way of letting others know that you're bodyguards. At least people will think twice before stirring up trouble!" She

continued with a sparkle in her eye, “We’ll reimburse you for the costs of the uniforms. Do remember to get more sets of the uniform as a backup for each of you!”

“Auntie, it isn’t too expensive. To be the Taylor family’s bodyguards is our honor. We can’t even begin to express our joy. So, just let us absorb this small cost!” said Elaine, her beautiful eyes brimming with intelligence.

“Oh! You see, this silly girl is so considerate. Alright, if that’s the case, you can bear the cost yourself!” said Fiona. “When I’m free, I’ll buy you all a meal. Next time, you don’t have to be too formal. When we’re alone together, you can be more casual.”

“Thank you, auntie. Auntie, you’re not only beautiful in looks, but your spirit is also beautiful, too!” chimed in another young woman.

“Oh, really? I never noticed!” Fiona laughed, her spirits were high.

Jack shook his head helplessly and said to Joan, “Mother, since we aren’t occupied now, let me take you out to buy a few sets of clothes. Let us get rid of the old clothes you had before!”

“Isn’t it a waste to throw out the clothes?” Joan smiled bitterly.

“Mother, don’t worry. We’ll never lack money again!” Jack also smiled bitterly and looked at her.

“Master! Let us call you master in the future!” Elaine appeared in front of Jack and asked, “Master, are you going out? We should follow you and protect you well!”

“Yes, yes, yes, master, we are now your bodyguards. If you want to leave home, we have the responsibility to protect you!”

The other nine women heard this and ran over, faces full of hope. Each of them wanted to go out shopping with Jack. Protecting Jack was just an excuse. The experience of going shopping with the Supreme Warrior was truly unparalleled.

“Wait, all of you have not even gotten your uniforms yet, so perhaps next time. Besides, whenever I leave the house, I don’t like having bodyguards with me—it feels too restrictive!”

Chapter 597

“Moreover, I’m still pretty capable. I don’t need bodyguards with me. Your main responsibilities are to protect my daughter, wife, and parents-in-law. Other than myself, everyone in my family needs to be accompanied by one or two bodyguards!”

Jack gave some thought and continued, “I don’t need all of you to follow us. Just one or two will do. You don’t need to come together to shop for clothes.”

Elaine heard this and was suddenly depressed. She hung her head low and could not hold herself back from muttering.

“You all should rest at home. Since I’m your master, you all should listen to me!” Jack said, looking at Elaine with a neutral expression.

“Yes, master! We’ll obey your every command in the future!”

Elaine smiled. To have such a close conversation with the Supreme Warrior was enough for her for now.

“Let’s go, mother!” Jack quickly whisked Joan out for their shopping trip.

The ten beauties, each carrying their own luggage, were quickly escorted by Jenny to their residence. Once the living arrangements were made, Jenny left. As soon as Jenny left, the beautiful bodyguards

gathered.

“Wow, Supreme Warrior looks even better the longer you look at him! I’ve never felt this way before. Previously, I thought he was just handsome. But now that I know that he’s the Supreme Warrior, he seems even more handsome to me!”

Elaine looked excited and cradled herself in her arms. “Although he rejected me earlier, just being so close to him and having a conversation with him—his indifferent smile, his charming voice—it’s all moving me so deeply.”

“Too bad, he’s already married. If he was single, we might still have hope.”

Orchid sighed and said, “As long as Supreme Warrior wishes it, I’ll do anything for him. I really wish to bear his child and be his woman! Life will be worth living being the woman behind him!”

“Yes, he’s married, but perhaps you can be his mistress? I know a warlord that just came home for a month and already got himself three wives. It can’t be helped. They’re way too charming!”

Another young woman said, “How can you even compare him to our Supreme Warrior!”

Orchid smiled forcefully, “Ah, let us just dream about this. It’s easier to climb to the heavens than to secure the love and affection of the Supreme Warrior. I heard that the George family daughter, Sharon George, is extremely beautiful. Furthermore, their family is so rich. Even she was rejected when she tried to pursue him. Do you ladies think we even have a chance?”

After hearing this, the entire group sighed together.

At this moment, in a different room, Xena had already taken a shower and changed into more comfortable clothes. She laid on her bed and could not resist muttering to herself, “Actually, Ben Taylor treats me quite well. He’s also not ugly, and Jack’s becoming richer. To have Jack as a brother-in-law

would also be great as he can easily hand me a million dollars. I foresee that life like this can be really comfortable!”

She paused. Thinking deeper, she muttered again, “If I don’t want to be the wife of the Taylor family, or if Ivan Taylor is the second heir and has billions of properties, then marrying Ben Taylor is also a pretty good deal. It’s not bad, at least I’d be able to live a better life than many other women. It’s a pity their money is still too little. Humans will always strive higher, water will always flow lower. It’s simply the order of nature. Brother-in-law, please don’t blame me!”

After she was done muttering, she picked up the phone and made a call to Ivan Taylor.

Chapter 598

“My darling, why are you calling me? Do you miss me?” Ivan Taylor was on the other end of the line, teasing her.

“Of course, I missed you. I haven’t seen you in just a day but it feels like three autumns have passed. I’m afraid of being discovered by Ben. I have to make excuses every time just to secretly meet you!”

Xena flirted with Ivan and said, “Hey, Ivan, did you know I was really scared to death today? You could’ve never seen me ever again. Fiona and I were out for a stroll and we were suddenly kidnapped!”

“What!” Ivan was shocked to hear this. He probed, “What happened? Who was the culprit? Are you okay?”

Knowing that Ivan cared for her, Xena felt happy. She said, “Don’t worry, we’re both safe now. The important part of the story is that damn Jack. I don’t know what’s going on. He’s offended the young master of the Xenos family from Sky City…”

Xena quickly relayed the entire story to Ivan.

Ivan heard it and exclaimed with joy, “F*ck, this is great!”

Xena momentarily got angry. “What? How dare you say it’s a great thing? If it weren’t for Jack who rushed over in time and his mastery of martial arts, I’m afraid I would’ve been raped and killed if we only relied on the marshal that we were connected to! How dare you say it’s a great thing? Ivan Taylor, do you not love me? Are you just using me?”

Xena discovered at this moment that she did quite like Ivan Taylor. Even though Ivan was a sweet talker, he at least knew how to make people happy. Although she loved money, she was not a loose woman. She had already slept with Ivan Taylor so many times that she naturally wanted to marry him and become his woman—his enviable, precious lady of the house.

She did not expect Ivan to react this way to a scenario where she had been kidnapped and almost lost her life. She thought, ‘Damn this Ivan Taylor, how dare he say it’s a great thing.’

“No, that’s not what I meant, baby. Don’t be angry!” Ivan hurriedly comforted her and said, “I didn’t mean you. I meant it’s great news that Jack offended the Xenos family. Don’t you know that Sky City was huge back in the day? It’s probably twice the size of Eastfield. There are many forces there, and there are many masters, and there are a lot of veterans going back this time. The Xenos family is a relatively large force in Sky City!”

“You mean the Xenos family will take revenge on behalf of the Xenos young master?”

Xena frowned after thinking for a while.

On the other side of the phone, Ivan said, “Yes. Jack, this rascal, killed the young master of the Xenos family. It’d be surprising if he didn’t invite any trouble to himself. For such a large force, even if their clan or people aren’t good, they can use Jack’s own tactics to kill him off!”

“That makes sense!” Xena finally understood and nodded. She said, “However, I’m afraid the Xenos family aren’t aware that their young master died. Even if they did, how would they know it was Jack? What if the Xenos young master failed to tell his family about his hatred for Jack?”

Chapter 599

“Ah, are you crazy? Don’t you want to live anymore? You don’t need to wait for their people to come over. We’ll find them ourselves and let them know about this. Let them come over and kill Jack. Isn’t it a simple matter?”

The more Ivan thought about it, the more passionate he became.

“F*ck, this Xenos family is scarier than the Clark family, Wilson family, and the Hugo family combined. They’re a lot more powerful. The most important thing is that they have money. As long as they have money, they can find masters who are able to execute the deal. Jack’s surely dead this time!”

“Hm, I wonder how Jack offended the Xenos family! Oh, I think I remember. In a battle, he said it was revenge for his master. His master’s King of War. Oh yes, it must be Magnus Sutherland. If Jack did not tell the God of War, Magnus Sutherland might not be dead…”

Xena started thinking of all the possible conclusions and started drawing her hypotheses.

“Xena, what are you thinking? How he offended them isn’t important. What’s important is that Jack’s really going to die this round!”

Ivan squeezed his fists. He was in a really good mood. He said, “When he dies, we must have a good celebration, and at that moment, I’ll announce that you’re my girlfriend and let the whole Taylor family know. It’s time to see if this useless Ben Taylor will be angered to death!”

“I’ll take your word for it. Once Jack dies, you have to announce our relationship. I don’t want to go on sneaking around like this!”

As Xena laid in bed, her figure appeared even more attractive. She said, “Oh yeah, this rascal Jack has already told us that we’ll be celebrating Selena’s birthday. Looks like he might not even make it until

then!”

“Doesn’t matter if he can’t make it. We need to spread this news out as soon as possible. Tomorrow, I’ll make sure everyone knows it, from the Taylor family relatives to the best of the best—God of War. That will be the best!”

Ivan laughed gleefully, “And when Jack’s dead, on Selena’s birthday, I’m afraid she’ll collapse. Once she does, how will she put up a fight with me for the Taylor family assets? At that point in time, Young Master Clark will be taking advantage of the situation and try to comfort her!”

“That makes sense!” Xena nodded and said, “If that’s the case, should we still let him drink the medicine we used before? It looks like we won’t need to anymore, right?

Ivan Taylor fell silent. After a pause, he said, “You still have to feed it to him. To be safe, the sooner the better. After all, this rascal isn’t weak in combat. In case the Xenos family underestimates how good he is on the battlefield, or if he escapes the ambush, it wouldn’t be so easy to find him again!”

At this point, Ivan paused and said again, “If he takes the medicine, his body will get weaker by the day. His strength will be greatly reduced. When the Xenos family attacks him, it’d make it so much easier to kill him. This is a two-pronged approach to take his wretched life!”

“Mm, if that’s the case, I’ll think of a way to get them out for a picnic and an open-air barbeque!” Xena offered.

“Mm, as to how you’re going to get it done, you can think about it yourself. It’d be best if you can act on it from tomorrow onwards. The timing would be perfect because it takes exactly a month for the medicine to work, and by then, it’ll coincide perfectly with Selena’s birthday!”

Xena nodded in agreement. The two of them chatted for a while longer before ending the call.

Chapter 600

At this very moment, Jack was at the shopping mall and had purchased many clothes for Joan. They also bought additional gold jewelry, gold earrings, and jade bangles. After a makeover, Joan's natural gentle elegance began to shine.

"Not bad, not bad. Let's get this necklace, too. Just swipe the credit card!"

Jack nodded satisfactorily and called for the receipts immediately.

"Stop buying things, you've been spending too much money. Son, a penny earned is a penny saved. You don't have that much cash on hand with you. You and Selena are both still young, there will be many areas where you'll need to spend. Kylie's still young, and you may have more children. There'll be more and more expenses. Plus, you've just hired so many staff at home…so many bodyguards. All of this will cost a large sum of money…"

Old habits die hard for Joan, and she still felt the pinch when Jack spent money. Today was a day where he had spent way too much on her.

"Mother, don't worry. I don't lack money!"

Jack took their purchases and followed Joan out. "Okay, I'll stop shopping. Let's go home. Mother, even if I wanted to buy the whole Drake family, it wouldn't be a problem. Do you still think I lack money?"

Although Jack didn't want to go into too much detail about how much money he had, he needed to say something that would make his worried mother feel at ease.

When Joan heard that, she took a deep breath and asked with a tremble in her voice, "That can't be. Son, are you really that rich? Is this for real? Don't lie to me."

Jack laughed. Holding his mother's shoulders, he said, "Mother, please, stop worrying. I'm just giving you a sense or an estimation so you'll feel at ease. Please, rest assured, your son is truly amazing. In the future, don't hold back. Just spend the money however you wish. You don't need to treat yourself like you did before. I'm your only close relative. I just want you to live a good life. That would make me feel at ease!"

Jack paused and said, "I don't wish to tell anyone this. Firstly, I just want to live a peaceful life and I don't want to draw attention to myself. After all, the tree attracts the wind. Secondly, you've seen what my mother-in-law is like. If she knew how rich I was, the whole world would know about it in two days!"

After listening to Jack's words, Joan nodded with satisfaction and said, "My son has really grown up and become an accomplished man. He's even become more calm and steady. A man who knows the value of restraint will be able to accomplish even greater things. My son, good job, you're my pride!"

"Mother, please, stop complimenting me. When I was on the battlefield, there were so many times I almost died, especially last year. It truly was an extreme danger! However, I kept thinking of you and Selena waiting for me at home. That was the reason why no challenge could hold me back, and I overcame it all!" said Jack, laughing with gratitude.

"Mm!" Joan nodded and said, "Jack, Selena is a great girl. You must treasure her. There have been so many rich young men trying to get close to her in recent years, trying to find a way to her heart. Faced with so many temptations, she was faithful and rejected them all. This type of girl is not easy to find!"

"Mother, please, don't worry. I already told you that we'll be hosting a grand banquet for her birthday!" said Jack.

…

The sky was getting darker. That night, the Xenos family of Sky City could no longer sit still.

"Master, what should we do? Is the young master still uncontactable?"

Next to the head of the Xenos family, an old man frowned slightly, worry lines appearing on his face.

Drag Xenos nodded and said, “I haven’t been able to reach him since yesterday afternoon. I’ve asked the staff, all the bodyguards that went out with him are also uncontactable!”

At this point, his expression grew darker. He choked slightly and said, “I suspect that something has happened to them.”

“No way!”

As the others heard this, they became frightened.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 601-605

Chapter 601

“Who dares lay a hand upon our young master? Does he have a death wish?”

It was another middle-aged man who spoke. His body was jacked with muscles, and he looked very sturdy from a glance.

“I know. He’s got a death wish! F*ck. There’s no need to be afraid of some so-called powerhouse from Eastfield!”

Another elder also spoke up, extremely furious, “We need to investigate the issue and find the culprit behind our young master’s death. We must kill him!”

Drag shook his head. “I think we should all just leave under the cover of the night. It’s not safe for us here any longer!”

“Why? Master, we’ve got plenty of villas and factories here, and our company’s here, too. Are you saying that you don’t want them any longer?”

One of the men wore a perplexed expression, unable to comprehend why his master would make such a decision.

“Quil was likely to have been with Marshal Zain. If Quil’s dead, and so are his bodyguards, Marshal Zain would’ve called me!”

Drag released a sigh. “But the Marshal hasn’t called, which means that he’s probably dead, too. We’ve provoked someone who shouldn’t have been provoked now. Eastfield is small, but don’t forget that plenty of war veterans have returned to the city, and there are plenty of Majors and Kings of War there. They even have a Goddess of War among them!”

“So, what you’re trying to say is that we’ve probably provoked a powerful veteran, sir? And it’s highly likely that they’re a King or God of War?”

One of the elders surmised after he thought about the matter in silence.

Drag nodded his head. “Quil had said that Jack was the one who leaked the secret to the Gods of War, and they had only killed my brother, Magnus, in a fit of rage. I suspect that they caused some trouble for Jack which then happened to attract the attention of the Gods of War. If that were the case, it’d been extremely unfortunate!”

At this moment, a frightening explosion resounded from outside. The terrifying cacophony of a fight immediately followed.

A bodyguard of the Xenos family immediately rushed in. “Bad news, sir. Someone’s ambushing our place. He’s in the mood for slaughter—and he’s very strong. I think he’s the famous King of War, Skylar Celestino!”

Drag instantly plopped onto his seat when he heard that, fearful. “We’re screwed. We’re completely, absolutely, screwed. Skylar is an eight-star King of War, an experienced fighter. No one in Sky City can hope to match his fighting prowess—what more someone from the Xenos family!”

“Ah. We’re too late. We probably would’ve survived if we’d left just a little earlier!”

An elder sighed.

It was too late now. The King of War was already there, ready for blood.

Three resounding crashes echoed consecutively, and three of the Xenos family’s fighters were thrown into the room. They lay on the ground, breathless.

“My apologies for the intrusion, but your young master offended someone who even I dare not offend. All the Xenos family can do now is to blame their unlucky stars!”

Skylar’s eyes were icy cold. He stood there, an immovable mountain of pure strength.

Chapter 602

It did not even take an hour for a single man to obliterate the powerful Xenos family of Sky City.

The powerhouses in Sky City were all extremely shocked when they learned about what had happened. This was the strength of a King of War—the terror of an eight-star King of War. Such power was far beyond the likes of normal powerhouses.

As to how the Xenos family provoked such a King of War, no one had the answer. They only knew that the young master of the Xenos family had stirred some trouble in Eastfield, thus, provoking this frightening enemy.

…

“Dad, Mom, we haven’t gone for a picnic in such a long time. Why don’t we take Jack, Selena, and Kylie to the countryside for a picnic tomorrow? How about that?”

Over the dining table, Xena suggested after she thought about it.

“Sure. I happen to be free tomorrow, and it’s been a long time since I’ve gone out with Kylie. Since tomorrow’s a Saturday, let’s go!” Selena said, smiling when she heard about the idea.

“Alright. Now that we’re rich, we can just drive away whenever we want to relax, and buy some stuff for a riverside barbecue!”

Ben chuckled. He could not help himself from shooting a glance at Xena beside him. “Who knew you’d learn to enjoy life more and more!”

“Why not? I was thinking we should all go out and have fun together!” Xena smiled.

When Xena and Selena had returned earlier, they did not catch sight of the ten beautiful bodyguards.

Who knew that at this moment, all ten bodyguards were wearing white sneakers and denim shorts, revealing their long, sexy legs. They wore loose-fitting T-shirts, giving off a seductive yet relaxed aura.

“Master, take a look. How are the working clothes we chose?”

The ten beauties filed into a single line after they came in. Elaine stepped forward and posed the question to Jack, grinning.

The beauties were all garbed in such uniformed dressing—it had to be said that it looked very easy on the eyes. Besides, each of them was full of life and vibrancy from a glance.

“You–you look great!”

Ben frowned after he observing them. “These are the bodyguards of the Taylor family? These are our bodyguards? Why didn’t I see them in the afternoon?”

One of the bodyguards immediately stepped forward. “Are you Young Master Ben? We rested for a while in the afternoon before we went to get some clothes,” she explained. “We’ve just arrived home, so we decided to try on our clothes for everyone to see. Are you satisfied with this?”

“Young Master Ben?”

Elation sparked in Ben’s heart when he heard that. That was right. He was a Taylor as well, and he was a young master of the family. He should have been living the life of an affluent young master from the start.

Unfortunately, five years ago, he had been kicked out of the Taylor family when he was still young because of the affair between his sister and Jack. It made him a laughingstock—trash of society who everyone sneered and looked down upon—a useless scum who only knew how to play video games.

When he was younger, the children of other affluent families who had been his playmates had all abandoned him eventually.

Being addressed so respectfully again caused a swirl of emotions to stir within his heart.

That was right. He was Young Master Ben from the very start. Finally, he was getting the respect he

deserved!

“What’s wrong, Young Master Ben? What happened?” The bodyguard asked, puzzled.

Chapter 603

“It’s nothing!” Ben smiled awkwardly and continued eating.

“You look good!” Jack also smiled. “But those words on your chests, ‘the Bodyguards of the Taylor Family’, that’s too attention-grabbing. It’s like you’re trying to tell everyone that the Taylor family has bodyguards!”

“Does it matter? We’re rich now. Isn’t it normal to hire bodyguards?”

Fiona grinned. “We’ll be going to the countryside for a picnic tomorrow, but since Jack is coming with us, you all won’t have to come along. You’ll only have to follow us if Xena and I go out shopping in the afternoon! Just two of you will do. It’ll be too striking if too many of you were to come!”

“Yes, ma’am. Then we’ll take our leave and patrol the area!”

Elaine smiled and brought her bodyguards out.

“Yay! We’re going out tomorrow!” Kylie was extremely elated, her gaze filled with anticipation.

After dinner, Kylie returned to her room to rest.

Meanwhile, Jack and Selena took a shower and laid on their bed.

“We can’t let Kylie know what happened this morning. She’d be worried!” Selena spoke after thinking about it.

Jack nodded. “Agreed. I never thought Quil would be so bold. Never mind that he lashed out against me, he even hired people to kidnap you and Xena—and even Mother!”

A frown formed between Selena’s brows. “Now, Quil is dead. I did some digging of my own and found out that there are two Xenos families in Sky City, and they’re both pretty strong. We don’t know which family he belongs to, but it doesn’t matter. They’ll probably come to you for revenge once they find out that you killed Quil!”

After she said that, Selena thought about it for a while before she added, “Dear, did you hire so many bodyguards because you were worried about this?”

Jack looked at her picture-perfect face before him. “I hired them because I’m worried about you and your mother’s safety the next time you go out. Besides, we’re rich now. It’s normal to hire bodyguards!”

Here, he paused for a bit before continuing nonchalantly, “As for the Xenos family, don’t worry about that. It won’t be easy for them to find out the truth since I took no prisoners. Besides, there’s always a solution to a problem. If we really can’t avoid conflict, I’m pretty good friends with the Goddess of War—we can go to her for help!”

Selena’s anxiety finally eased after she heard what her husband said. She bobbed her head. “By the way, Xena’s really weird. She’s never initiated a family outing before, and even if she did, it’d usually just be her and Ben. Why would she think of including us in her plans this time?”

Jack’s brows furrowed. “You also thought it was strange, dear? I thought so, too. Seems like Xena did a one-eighty flip. Perhaps she’s in a good mood today because I gave her one million dollars?”

Selena’s expression darkened when she heard that. “She’s definitely seeing a man on the side while using my brother as a cover,” she said, vexed. “Didn’t we say that we’d find that man and break my

brother's heart once we had evidence? Why did you go and give her money instead?"

After she said that, she rolled her eyes at Jack. "Don't tell me that you gave her money because she's good-looking?"

"Her?"

Jack did not know whether to laugh or cry. "Not only is she unattractive compared to you, but she's also unattractive even compared to Sharon. Why would I give her money because she's good-looking? It's like this…"

Selena's anger only abated after she listened to Jack's explanation. "So you're trying to get her to lower her guard and reveal her true colors later on!"

Jack nodded. "But I still don't get why she suddenly asked us all to go out!"

Chapter 604

"I know. I really don't understand. Is it because you saved her and gave her a million dollars, or has she really had a change of heart?" Selena speculated for a moment.

"A change of heart?" Jack flashed a frosty smile. "A leopardess like this can never change her spots. She's extremely greedy—even greedier than your mother. There's a possibility that she's got some devious scheme in the works for tomorrow!"

"No way. We're going out and she's scheming?"

Selena smiled and lay down after turning the lights off. "Let's go to sleep!"

Jack hugged her from behind. “Dear, we were interrupted by Kylie last night, but she’s asleep in her room now. Should we…”

“Seriously? Why are you always thinking of such perverted things, you b*stard!”

Panic suddenly gripped Selena’s chest. There was a hint of coyness in her tone.

Jack was delighted when he sensed that coyness. He decided to continue with the game.

He flipped Selena over and pressed his mouth against hers.

“Mmph!”

Selena was extremely nervous, but she wrapped her slim, tapered hands around Jack anyway. The two became one.

The next morning, Selena stretched her body after she woke up. Her face was slightly flushed, and her skin looked bright and clear.

“You’re beautiful, dear!”

Jack stared at her, goggle-eyed.

“Hmph. You didn’t even ask for my permission last night and you went ahead and bullied me!” Selena harrumphed, but warmth emanated from her belly.

To be fair, she had been dead drunk on her wedding night and could not remember anything that had

happened between them.

“your entire face is red, dear. I think I’m falling deeper and deeper in love with you!”

Jack chuckled and hugged Selena who had just gotten off the bed.

“Since when did you learn how to speak such sweet nothings!”

Selena picked her clothes up from the floor and rolled her eyes at him. “Turn around. I’m changing!”

Selena’s cheeks were stained red as she forcibly turned Jack around.

Jack spoke, grinning as his heart was just as full of warmth as before. It seemed that the two were just about to begin a passionate love story.

“Agh, so annoying. Quiet, you!”

Selena was so embarrassed that she wanted to dig a hole and bury herself in it. After she finished changing, she ran over and gave Jack a vicious pinch on the back.

“I never thought you’d have such wild moments too, dear!”

Yet Jack turned around and embraced her, not the least bit irritated. He planted a kiss on her forehead. “All right. Let’s wash up and head down for breakfast!”

“All right!”

Selena resembled a preening cat in Jack's embrace, purring with delight. The smile on her face was small and sweet.

Before, she had hoped to experience this feeling—that she was protected. However, she had no choice but to be strong for her family when Jack was not around. She had no choice but to be a strong, independent woman who had to carry the weight of her family on her shoulders.

Chapter 605

Now that Jack was back, she had hope.

"Right. No matter what happens, you have to promise me one thing, dear!" Selena lifted her chin and told Jack.

"What is it? I'll promise you anything!" Jack smiled.

"We must find the man Xena's seeing. She's extremely clever, so we have to be cautious not to alert her!"

Selena thought about it for a while. Then she said, huffing, "Xena has my brother and my parents eating out of her palm now. They won't believe whatever you and I say. That's why we have to catch them in the act and let my brother see who she really is. Only then will he completely give up on her!"

"All right, I get it. Don't worry. I'll be discreet, and I'll catch the man she's seeing!" Jack nodded and promised.

After they washed up, they went into Kylie's room to wake her up before the three went down for breakfast.

When breakfast was done, everyone got into their cars and drove to a small river in the countryside.

They set up their barbecue pit, took out the ingredients, and began grilling the food.

There were usually plenty of people barbecuing around the area since it was specially reserved for barbecues. There were even hired staff to clear the place. However, they would need to pay 20 dollars to use the facilities.

On one side, there was a public toilet, as well as a few pavilions for everyone to rest and play.

Not too far away was a fairly large supermarket. Business was pretty good in a place like this.

“Mmph! It’s so good!” Kylie relished her chicken skewer.

“It’s a little hot today. You and Ben are drenched in sweat, Jack!”

Xena smiled. She had been calling out Jack’s name in an endearing tone since they left the house that morning. It was evident that she was a lot closer to him now.

“Oh, right. Thanks for yesterday, Jack. I would’ve been dead if it weren’t for you. You’re my savior!”

Xena smiled and added, “I’ll go to the supermarket and buy some water for all of you!”

“Don’t sweat it. We’re family. I couldn’t just leave you to die. Consider your debt paid as long as you continue your loving relationship with Ben!” Jack chuckled as he replied.

“Don’t worry. It’ll happen!”

Xena stood up and wheeled around, heading toward the supermarket.

She arrived at the supermarket and bought quite a few bottles of mineral water.

She looked at Jack from a distance. Once she was sure that no one was around, she opened one of the bottles and popped the medicine into it.

Of course, the pill was amazing. It completely dissolved and no one could tell that it was poisoned.

Once the poison was completely invisible to the naked eye, Xena heaved an internal sigh of relief. She capped the bottle and placed it on top of the bag, walking towards Jack and the others.

She was well aware that Jack was intelligent. If she gave him the bottle that had an opened cap, he would definitely be suspicious.

However, she was not an idiot either. She placed the bag on the ground when she arrived at Jack's side and immediately took the bottle, wrenching its cap off. She thrust it to him. "Here, Jack. Drink some water. Look at you. You're bathing in sweat!"

"Oh!"

Jack frowned. Xena was being a little too nice to him.

Still, it was just a bottle of water. He was probably reading too much into it. He took the bottle from her. "Thanks!"No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 606-610

Chapter 606

From the side, Ben's brows furrowed as he was grilling the meat. He could not comprehend the scene

before him.

He was Xena's boyfriend, not Jack. Why was she never this considerate with him?

Furthermore, Jack was his brother-in-law. Xena's actions twisted his guts.

Xena's heart leaped in excitement when Jack took the bottle. She immediately whipped out another bottle and opened it for Ben. "Here you go, Ben. You're drenched in sweat, too!"

"Okay!"

Ben was delighted. He instantly snatched the bottle and took a big gulp out of it.

"We'll grab it ourselves!"

Selena forced a polite smile but was not very happy. Jack was her husband. Since when was Xena responsible for caring for him?

Besides, she even opened the cap for him. This was being a little too friendly. Even if she did that, she should have given the bottle to Ben first. Why did she let Jack take it first?

Here, Selena could not help but suspect that she was beginning to like Jack just because he saved her yesterday, and because he had given her a million dollars. Even if she did not like him, it was possible that she was trying to seduce him now that she knew that he was rich, so that she could siphon some money from him.

At this moment, Jack took the bottle and was about to take a sip, but he stopped.

Xena frowned. Was Jack able to detect even a colorless, tasteless poison?

Anxiety clutched at her heart when she considered the possibility. Jack was someone who could kill without blinking. He would probably give her a single punch and send her into oblivion if he found out she tried to poison him.

Her expression darkened. She stared at Jack, trepidation pounding in her chest. She felt as though she could hear her own pulse.

“What’s wrong, Jack? Aren’t you thirsty?” Xena gulped and posed the question tentatively.

Jack craned his head to look at her and flashed a wan smile. “Of course, I’m thirsty!”

After saying that, he tilted his head back and gulped the water down, drinking more than half of it in one go. In the end, only a little bit was left. He carelessly flung it into the trash can beside him.

He was well aware that there was something in the water—and he was even more aware of what exactly was in it.

For a brief moment, a murderous intent surged within Jack. He wanted to shred that d*mn b*tch apart. However, he quickly toned down on his anger.

He remembered what Selena had told him that morning, and he remembered his promise to her—that he would not alert Xena to his actions. They needed to weed out the man she was seeing, and they needed to show Ben that Xena was seeing someone else behind his back.

Besides, Ben was here now, and so were Fiona and the others. He would have no way to explain himself if he killed Xena.

Would they even believe him if he told them the water was poisoned? The poison would probably take about a month to manifest, so he would be fine for now, almost as if he had never drunk any poison. Would they believe him? A poison like this was truly dangerous.

More importantly, even if they did believe him, Xena would never admit to it. They would not be able to do anything if she insisted that she did not know anything, and she would probably shift the blame to the bottled water company.

Xena heaved an internal sigh of relief when she saw Jack drinking the water—and plenty of it to boot.

He probably did not know anything. Otherwise, he would not have drank nearly the entire bottle in one go. There would be absolutely no evidence then.

“Come on, let’s eat! The wings are ready!”

Chapter 607

Jack distributed the freshly barbecued wings to everyone. After a while, he stood up. “Take your time eating it. I’m going to the toilet.”

After he ducked into a cubicle, he whipped out a silver needle and pricked his skin on several acupuncture points.

At that moment, he vomited all the poison in his stomach.

Jack flashed a cold smile after he kept the silver needle away. “This poison isn’t a bad idea at all, but it’s shallow of her to try to kill me with this!”

He walked out nonchalantly.

At around one in the afternoon, everyone packed up and drove home.

Xena retreated to her room to rest once they arrived home. Meanwhile, Jack took Selena out for a stroll through the small patch of forest outside their villa.

“What on earth happened to Xena? She hated your guts before, and now she’s treating you like a god. Never mind her buying water for you—she even opened the cap for you!”

Selena was still unhappy when she thought about what had happened earlier.

“Selena, she’s not being nice to me. She poisoned that bottle of water!”

Yet, Jack gave her a frosty smile. “If I hadn’t promised you that I’d remain discreet just so we can weed out the man she’s seeing, I would’ve killed her on the spot!”

“What?!” Selena was shocked. “That–that bottle was poisoned? No way. Didn’t she just buy it?”

Jack smiled again. “She did, but she dropped the poison in before giving it to me. She even pretended to open the cap for me because she was afraid I’d realize the cap had been opened before!”

“My god. No way. I really thought she had turned over a new leaf just because you saved her and that she wanted to establish a good relationship with you. Who knew the witch would dare to poison you!”

Selena was extremely angry. “God. You’re such an idiot, dear,” she quickly added, frightened. “Why did you drink that water, then? And you drank almost all of it!”

“Don’t worry. Your husband is a miracle doctor. I’ve solved this little problem a long time ago!”

Jack chuckled and spoke, “The poison will probably take about a month to manifest if you don’t treat it, but since I’ve treated it, it won’t be a problem.”

“I’m so mad! I’m going to kill that b*tch!”

The more Selena thought about it, the angrier she became. Xena was really rotten to the core. Fortunately, Jack was a doctor and sensed that something was off soon enough to cure himself of the poison. What would happen if it happened to a regular joe? Was she really going to resign herself to the fate of a widow?

However, she only took two steps before Jack dragged her back. “What are you doing? You’re going to alert her if you do this. Besides, what proof do you have now? If you go, she might just turn the tables on us and knock you down senseless instead, and she’ll frame us both. Your brother and your mother won’t believe you. They’ll definitely think you’re still against her!”

“But I just get so frustrated when I think about it!”

Selena was so angry that she stomped her foot against the ground.

“Don’t worry. I’m going to use her own trick against her. She thinks that I drank that poison so naturally, she’d want to report the entire situation to her man. I believe someone is manipulating her actions from behind the scenes because no ordinary person can procure that poison so easily!”

Jack smiled. He was well aware that the poison Xena had fed him was probably the same poison Ken and Neil had intended to give Fiona, which would have been fed to him eventually.

That was why he surmised that the man behind Xena’s back was probably Ken Clark or Neil Hugo. They knew that she was someone who would do anything for money, and that was probably why they had instructed her to administer the poison on him.

Chapter 608

“You’re right. It’s frustrating, but we have to hold our anger back for now. I believe our enemy doesn’t have any precautions set in place. He’ll definitely reveal himself soon!”

Selena finally calmed down after a while. How could she not control herself when Jack was able to control himself and drink the poison even after knowing that the water had been poisoned?

The only thing she could do was to hold it all in—for the sake of her brother and her parents so that they would not be blinded any further by this woman.

“Do we have any countermeasures? Or do we just wait like this?”

Selena could not help but say after thinking about it, “I really think we should hurry up and catch that b*tch while she’s with the man.”

Jack flashed a bitter smile. “I’m just worried that this man isn’t in an intimate relationship with her. It’ll be impossible for us to catch them on the same bed. What if the man just wanted to use Xena to give the poison to me? What if he had already given Xena some down payment earlier? She would have the money to buy all those clothes and our judgment would’ve been wrong!”

Selena also nodded. “You’re right. If that were the case, my brother will have zero trust in you!”

Jack also frowned. Dealing with this entire scenario was harder than slaughtering enemies on the battlefield. He noticed that Xena had been buying new clothes and bags quite frequently. She dressed more seductively, as well. Both he and Selena had assumed that she was seeing a man on the side and that she had traded her body for money. They thought she was seeing two men at the same time.

However, Xena poisoning him today caused Jack some uncertainty about his initial judgment. If the man had only given her money to administer poison, how was he going to explain it to Ben?

“I really think we need to be super cautious about everything we do!”

The crease between Selena’s brows deepened. She did not want to waste a single moment because having a woman like Xena right beside her was like being with a viper in a pit.

Today, she had given Jack the poison. In the future, she might give it to Ben, or her parents. For a woman as venomous as her, they needed to reveal her true colors as soon as possible.

“Dear, do you have such little faith in your husband?”

Jack flashed her a bitter smile. “I’ve told the bodyguards at the gate a long time ago to keep tabs on her. If they see Xena walking out alone, without a bodyguard or Ben, they’ll report it to me in secret,” he said. “I’ve also secretly installed a bug and tracking device on her today.”

“Seriously? You’re amazing, dear!”

Selena was suddenly delighted when she heard that. She impulsively flung her arms around Jack’s neck, giving him a peck on the cheek. “Now I know you’ve had a plan all along, dear.”

“Of course. Xena’s very cunning. It’ll be difficult to unravel her schemes if we don’t do some scheming of our own.”

When Jack pressed a button on his side, he could hear everything she was doing.

“All right, Ben. It’s getting late. Rest nicely at home and wait for me. My friends have asked me out for karaoke.”

Xena’s voice drifted.

Jack and Selena shared a glance when they heard this. Their hearts leaped in delight. Was Xena really going to head out alone? This was too much of a coincidence. They actually heard what they wanted to hear the moment they decided to eavesdrop on her.

Ben's voice rang out as well. "Bring me along, Xena. I'm a pretty good singer, too. I'm so bored at home. You never bring me out when you see your friends!"

Xena replied, "Why would you come along? They won't be happy if you're with me. We've already said that we wouldn't bring others to our meetings, and we wouldn't bring men along. Us girls are only able to completely relax when we're singing on our own!"

Chapter 609

Xena paused for a while before resuming, "Right. Don't call me at night either, okay? We always play a game during our gatherings where we'd put all of our phones on the table, and the owner of the phone that's the first to ring will be the one to pick up the bill. We always end up spending over ten thousand dollars, so I definitely don't want to pay. We have to save up a bit. Understand?"

"Then, when will you be back?"

Ben's voice rang from the listening device again.

"Seriously, Ben? Why do I feel like you've been nagging at me more and more lately? My friends and I always hang out, drinking until late in the night. What do you mean 'when am I coming back'? Of course, we're going to go to a hotel to sleep. I'll come back in the morning!"

Xena was getting a little impatient. "All right, I'm off. See you tomorrow!"

Soon after, they heard the thud of a closing door. It seemed that Xena had gone out.

Jack and Selena heard the clicking of heels from outside, growing softer as the sound faded into the distance and followed its master down the stairs.

“Dear, it seems like Xena’s going to see that man. This is a golden opportunity for us!” Selena spoke.

Jack nodded. “She definitely thinks that I’ve been poisoned. Now, she either can’t wait to ask for her reward or she’s going to report the incident to him. As to whether she’s in an intimate relationship with that man, I don’t dare to ascertain just yet.”

“I do think they’re in a physical relationship!”

Selena mulled over it for a while, then she spoke in a solemn tone, “I have a strong feeling that they are since she’s so secretive about it. She wouldn’t do this if they weren’t in a physical relationship. Secondly, never mind that she’s been dressing more provocatively lately, she’s also been spraying on some heavy perfume. The possibility of them being lovers is very large.”

“All right. I trust your judgment. We can call your brother now and find our proof!”

Jack gave her a small smile and together, they left their room. They also temporarily disabled the eavesdropping function on the device, only leaving the tracking function on.

“Mr. Jack…”

They did not expect the bodyguard at the entrance to approach them as soon as they exited. “Mr. Jack, Xena…”

It was evident he had come over to report the situation.

“Never mind,” Jack interrupted him. “I know what’s going on. Go down now!”

The bodyguard nodded and went down.

Jack and Selena stood in front of Ben’s room, their insides stirring with uneasiness. In the end, Selena sighed heavily before knocking on the door.

“Sis? Jack? What’s going on?”

Ben stared at the two of them suspiciously when he opened the door.

“Let’s go. Don’t forget that promise you and Jack made. If you find her with another man, you’ll kill her yourself. Right?”

Selena’s expression darkened as she looked at her brother, utterly solemn.

Chapter 610

“Sis, what are you talking about? Hasn’t she gone for a karaoke session with her girlfriends?”

Ben frowned. His features twisted into a slight grimace. Now that his sister and Jack came over looking for him, they probably had some measure of certainty in themselves.

He never wanted to believe what they said, but he himself felt that Xena had changed a lot lately. She would frequently go out with her so-called girlfriends, and she would never bring him along.

Still, he harbored hopes that everything was a fluke and that he was reading too much into her actions. He hoped that Jack would never find his evidence, and he definitely hoped that Xena would wed him and that they would have the wedding soon.

Yet this day had come, and it had arrived so soon, too. Jack and Selena were both standing at his door.

“How can you be so idiotic, brother? Both of you are about to get married. She’s your fiancée. Why wouldn’t she bring you along if she’s going to see her girlfriends for karaoke? Besides, this isn’t just a one-time thing, right?”

Selena was speechless for a while before she spoke with a tinge of disappointment.

“But Sis, she herself said that her girlfriends don’t bring outsiders along and that they can only loosen up when they’re alone among themselves. That’s why she doesn’t bring me along…”

Ben insisted on believing in Xena.

“So…are you coming along? She’s definitely going to see a man. Don’t tell me you’re chickening out now? Why are you so scared if you trust her so much?” Selena spoke with irritation in her voice, her arms folded across her chest.

“Let’s go, then. I refuse to believe she’ll do something like that to me after all I’ve done for her!”

Ben clenched his palm into a fist and stomped out of the door, trudging down the stairs.

Selena shot Jack a glance and the two immediately trailed after him. The three quickly got into a car and drove out.

“But Sis, Xena has been out for a few good minutes now. Can we even find her? Don’t tell me you know where she is.”

Ben’s heart palpitated as he sat at the back.

He knew that Jack was clever and that he would always have a plan in wait. Since he and his sister had brought him out so confidently, they probably had pretty good proof already.

Selena, who sat beside Jack, took his phone out. She turned it on and showed it to Ben.

“You two planted a tracking device on her?”

Ben watched the flashing dot on the screen moving forward. His expression darkened.

“We had no choice. Xena’s extremely sneaky. We’d be found out long ago if we didn’t do this. That’s why the best method is to let her go first before following her.”

Selena’s lips curled into a bitter smile. Although she felt that this method was a little underhanded, she had no choice but to go along with it for the sake of her little brother, so that he would finally open his eyes to the truth.

“She stops! It’s the Grand Star Hotel!” Selena yelled abruptly as she quickly realized that the red dot stopped moving as soon as it arrived at the Grand Star Hotel.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 611-615

Chapter 611

After she spoke her last word, she wheeled around to look at Ben. His face went white, as though an artist had forgotten to put any color on his face.

A few seconds of silence filled the car before Ben blurted awkwardly, “There are several restaurants on the first floor. Perhaps she made an appointment with her girlfriends to have dinner first, or perhaps they agreed to meet at the hotel before they head out for karaoke? Isn’t it normal?”

Ben paused for a moment and then his face lit up as if some idea popped up in his mind. “Look! Aren’t there a few bars next to the Grand Star Hotel? They could’ve just parked their cars in the hotel’s parking lot and plan to walk over to these bars, right? That’s possible, too! So, Sis, don’t simply make assumptions. I believe in Xena—she’s not a slutty person!”

Selena was stunned. She could not believe that up until this moment, her dear brother still had so much trust in Xena, siding her without hesitation. A cold smile crossed her face as she snorted, “My dear brother, how could you still believe in her? Can’t you tell how cunning and vicious she is? Didn’t you feel she was acting strange when we went for the barbeque this morning?”

“Acting strangely? Which part of her behavior was strange? I didn’t see it!”

Ben frowned. The folds between his brows grew deeper as he tried to recall any strange act from Xena. Suddenly, he shouted out of nowhere, “Oh! Sis, are you referring to when Xena handed Jack a bottle of water? Are you jealous because of that? If that’s the case, Sis, you’re being oversensitive! It’s just a bottle of water, what’s the matter?”

A frosty smile returned to Selena’s face. “Just a bottle of water? Do you know what was in that bottle of water…”

Selena briefly recounted the episode to Ben.

“Impossible! Xena’s no such person! How could she do such a thing? Somebody must have threatened her to do so! Yes! This must be the case, somebody had threatened her!”

The truth could not reach Ben’s ears. He refused to believe it. In his heart, Xena was almost a symbol of an angel—pure and innocent. She had never allowed Ben to touch her even after being together for so long. She told him to wait until the day of their wedding night. Only then, would she allow him to touch her.

A pure-hearted angelic girl like Xena would be hard to find in this world. He truly believed that he was so fortunate to meet such a perfect girl.

As for the fact that Xena always wore sexy and provocative clothing and loved dressing up, that was because Xena was a fan of fashion! There was nothing wrong with her pursuit of fashion. Not to mention, the love for beauty is a woman's nature.

Jack drove the car and parked outside the Grand Star Hotel as they spoke.

He grabbed his phone from Selena and said in a firm and solemn tone, "Ben, this button will turn on the eavesdropping function of the device that I've secretly planted under her bag. This small device not only helps to track but also to listen to the sound around it. The only flaw is that this device can't record their voices. However, I believe that the eavesdropping function is sufficient for us to know whether or not Xena's meeting her girlfriends as she said. Once I turn on this button, we'll know the truth!"

Jack stopped for a moment before he resumed, "The red dot has stopped in this area. This indicates that Xena has arrived at her destination. Now, do you dare turn on the function to listen in on her?"

Ben gritted his teeth, stretched out his finger, and finally tapped on the button on the screen.

A man's voice came from the phone.

"Baby, finally you're here! You've made me wait for so long!"

A coy woman's voice emerged in the next second. It belonged to Xena.

"Jeez. I have to sneak out every time I want to see you. I even have to look at the rearview mirror when I drive to make sure nobody follows me. You've made me into a thief now. Ivan, I don't want to live a fearful life like this anymore!"

“Ivan Taylor!” Jack and Selena exchanged glances in unison. Their eyes widened at the fact. They had their guesses and made a lot of speculations, but Ivan Taylor had never crossed their minds. How could they have guessed that the b*stard Xena was seeing was Ivan Taylor!

Moreover, judging from the conversation itself, it was obvious that this was not the first time they were together—they must have been together for a very long time.

Selena switched her gaze over to Ben. This time, Ben was no longer calm. He clenched his fists and gritted his teeth, staring straight at the phone. Rage was consuming him alive. The veins on his neck were popping out, and at the same time, his eyes reddened.

Chapter 612

“How could it be him?”

Selena’s forehead puckered. She was at a loss for words. If Xena was with the others, it would not cause this much emotional damage. How could it be Ivan Taylor?

Even Jack’s face turned gloomy at this fact.

After all, Ivan was Selena’s cousin. If it was Ken Clark or the others, Jack could have just ended their lives without thinking twice.

Ken and the others were always targeting Jack and his family. They even wanted to slit Jack’s throat. If the poison was given by Ken, Jack would have no worries about killing him.

However, if the person behind it was Ivan Taylor, the situation became more complicated. Ivan is a Taylor and Selena’s cousin, after all. If he sent him to the grave, it would be too much. Besides, Ivan had never inflicted grave harm on Jack before, other than hatred, mockeries and contempts.

Furthermore, if Old Master Taylor knew that Jack had killed his only grandson—Ivan Taylor—he would spew blood to death. Not to mention, Xena was the one who initiated the dirty deed and had offered herself to Ivan. Hence, Ivan could not be blamed completely.

Besides, the Taylor family's anger would spike if Jack killed Ivan just because of their secret affair.

After all, one hand cannot clap alone. It was not as if Ivan had forced Xena into this.

"Dear, what do you say? I'll follow you!"

Feeling uneasy to decide after considering all the possibilities, Jack threw the ball to Selena, letting her decide.

"Xena, this woman, I'll let my brother end her. As for Ivan Taylor, hmmm, it wouldn't be a good idea to kill him. He's responsible for the South Hill Real Estate projects and he's my cousin, too. If we kill over this matter, Grandpa Taylor won't be satisfied."

After giving some thought to the situation, Selena opened her mouth, "However, it doesn't matter if Xena was the one who offered herself to him or he went to Xena first. We can't let this slide. Beat him up, hard! Make him bedridden for at least half a month!"

"By the way, I've some great news to tell you!" Xena's voice rang from the phone again.

"Oh, what's making you so giggly?" Ivan returned, smilingly.

"The good-for-nothing b*stard Jack drank the poisoned water yesterday! And he's completely unaware of it!"

Xena beamed and her mouth curved into a wicked smile. “As long as this b*stard dies, you can announce our relationship in front of everyone in the Taylor family. I’ll officially be your girlfriend then I won’t have to be with Ben the hopeless waste any longer!”

“Did you really give Jack the poison? Are you sure?”

Ivan’s surprised voice contained a hint of disbelief. He had been looking forward to this day for a very long time!

“Of course, I’m sure! Yesterday, I purposely suggested going on a barbeque picnic. He was responsible for the grilling, which made him sweat like a pig. So, I volunteered to buy them some drinks and seized the opportunity to put the poison pill into his bottle of water. I pretended to help him open the bottle before handing it to him. I seriously didn’t expect that he’d drink the whole bottle of water in one go without questioning anything…”

As she narrated the incident, brazenness and arrogance could be heard in Xena’s tone as though she had accomplished a glorious deed.

“Well done, Xena, well done! Also, it’s just one month away from Selena’s birthday, and that day will also be Jack’s memorial day. His body will become weaker and weaker as the days pass, and in his last two days, his body will fester. Hmph! Everyone will celebrate when he dies!”

Ivan laughed aloud, and then added, “Babe, come here. Let me undress you. You deserve a good reward from me!”

“Aww. You’re so cute when you’re impatient to get me!”

Xena’s voice was full of coquetry.

“You little imp. You don’t say what you think, do you?”

Ivan let out a laugh.

In the car, Ben was burning with so much anger he was about to explode.

It turned out that what Jack and his sister had been saying was true, that Xena, this slutty woman, had long been in private affairs with other men.

Moreover, Jack's statement about Xena poisoning him was proved to be true, too.

Never did he expect that Xena was such a woman—a rotten and dirty woman. What she said about him—a hopeless trash—was completely beyond his imagination as well. She was nasty!

"Oh, right. Don't forget to buy me a villa, too!" Xena's voice appeared again.

Chapter 613

Ben gnashed his teeth as the anger thrummed through his veins. He stretched out his hand and tapped the button on the screen, turning off the listening device. In the next second, he got out of the car and strode towards the hotel.

"Let's go!"

Jack and Selena exchanged quick glances before getting out of the car to follow behind Ben.

The three appeared at the front desk of the hotel in a flash.

"Please check which room Ivan Taylor is staying in!" Jack commanded with a frosty expression.

“Mr., our customer’s information is confidential. I’m sorry but I can’t tell you…” The female receptionist replied politely.

Without further ado, Jack pulled out a stack of bills from his wallet and slapped them on the desk. “You have two choices here. First, find out the room and the money belongs to you. Second, I’ll kill you right away!”

Jack’s words had successfully frightened the female receptionist. She knew that there were many people in this world that she could not afford to offend.

Even their boss would not provoke such a person.

Clearly, Jack fit into the definition of ‘such a person’.

The female receptionist frantically typed on the keyboard and searched through the system. “Room five-oh-two!” she yelled.

Jack let out an icy laugh. “I’m glad you brought your brain with you today!”

The stack of bills was left on the receptionist’s desk. The three of them strode towards the elevator and took it to the fifth floor. Soon, they arrived outside of Room 502.

“Oh no! It’s a keycard door! We can’t open it!”

The skin between Selena’s brows crinkled when she noticed the hotel room door was inaccessible.

However, the top-notch quality door was kicked wide open with just a single kick from Jack.

After the three entered the room abruptly, Xena—who was lying in the bed—emitted a piercing scream. She was so frightened that she hid under the blanket, using it to cover her body and face in hopes that her face was not exposed to the intruders.

When the door burst open, Xena reacted almost instantly. She knew that something was wrong so she hid under the blanket right away.

Ivan's expression morphed into one of horrified surprise as well. The only clothing left on his body was a pair of boxers. He quickly put on his shirt and a pair of pants.

"Jack, Ben, Selena, why are you here? Are you guys insane? How dare you break into my room!"

Ivan got out of bed, a frosty expression covering his face. He reprimanded them aggressively.

"You son of a b*tch!"

Ben could no longer hold back his anger. He leaped toward Ivan with a firmly balled fist, slamming a punch on the bridge of Ivan's nose.

The punch sent Ivan backward, causing him to fall onto the ground, hard. When he got up on his feet, a stream of scarlet blood flowed from his nostrils and down his face.

"Motherf*cker! Ben, are you nuts? Why did you hit me? What right do you have to hit me!"

Ivan stabilized himself on his feet and shot Ben a deadly stare. "The woman in bed right now is from a nightclub! I found her in a nightclub! Why the f*ck did you hit me?"

“Stop pretending, f*cker! Stop lying! Do you think I don’t know who’s under the blanket? That’s my fiancée!”

A fresh swell of rage rose in Ben again as he charged forward, swinging his fist at Ivan.

Chapter 614

Xena hid under the blanket. She did not dare make a sound because she believed that when Ben and the others barged into the room, they did not manage to see her. Therefore, they could have just been throwing some guesses to lure her out. As long as Ivan kept denying it, there would still be hope for her to stay hidden.

Ivan saw the fist that was coming right at his face but this time, he was well prepared. He swayed slightly to the left, just enough to avoid the blow, and then he shot his right knee upwards, striking Ben’s abdomen.

Ben’s abdomen was struck by Ivan’s powerful kick. He plopped onto the ground.

“Ridiculous! How would you know if it was Xena? Don’t simply make assumptions!”

Ivan swallowed down his nervousness and kept it in check, making sure the three did not pick up anything strange from him. “I got this woman from a nightclub! What fiancée? Stop spewing nonsense!” He retorted in a pretentious yet calm tone.

“Ah! I’ll fight you to death!”

Ben shot up from the ground and charged toward Ivan, again.

Nonetheless, Ben was sent flying backward with another kick. He plummeted to the ground, again. Ben was not on par with Ivan.

“You’re indeed useless trash! Do you think I’m as weak as you? I’ve had bodyguards since I was young. Of course, I’ve learned and practiced a few moves! And you? Your pathetic brain is only filled with games! Yet, you still dream about beating me?”

Ivan emitted a wicked chuckle, brazenness and arrogance covered his face as if he was the ruler of the earth.

“Hmmm. Ivan Taylor, did you just forget my existence?”

Jack put on a cold smile. Ivan gave the poison to Xena, and if he could not kill Ivan, at least he would give him a good and unforgettable lesson!

“Jack, you, stop right there! I didn’t even sleep with your woman, why are you being nosy? Besides, the things between men and women are out of their own will. I didn’t force her to sleep with me!”

When Ivan saw that Jack was about to approach him, he unconsciously stumbled back to the corner of the room, gulping fearfully. Even though he knew a bit of fighting, he could only, at best, beat someone like Ben Taylor. Fighting with Jack? It would be like an ant trying to pick on an elephant—no chance.

“Can’t do. He’s my beloved wife’s brother, after all. You beat my dear brother-in-law, it would only be fair if I beat you up to avenge him, right?”

The corners of Jack’s mouth curled upwards, showing a disdainful smile. He walked slowly towards Ivan, painfully slow.

At this time, Ben had got up on his feet as well. He wiped off the blood near his nose and shot Ivan a hateful stare.

Jack glanced over to Ben and said, “Ben, didn’t you promise us before? If the woman under the blanket was Xena, you’d end her life yourself, right? You said that as long as I found evidence for you, you’d send her to hell. Don’t you forget our deal!” Jack paused for a moment and continued, “So, I won’t do anything to Xena. You should be the one to do it!”

Ben’s teeth were gritted firmly as he looked at the shivering figure hiding under the blanket. He strode belligerently to the bed and pulled the blanket sheet away forcefully.

“Ah!”

Xena, who was hiding under the blanket sheet, trembled at the thought of knowing Jack was here as well. Her hope to stay hidden and alive was ripped away completely when she knew that Jack was here and that Ben was going to kill her. Her heart hammered in her chest and her body shook with fear.

She could not figure out how Jack and the others discovered where she was and that she was secretly seeing Ivan. She deliberately took extra precautions when she went out today! She even kept an eye on the surroundings when she got out of her car in the hotel’s parking lot. No one and no car was following her, not to mention Jack and the others!

“Ben Taylor, what are you doing! F*cking pervert! I haven’t put on my clothes yet!”

Xena stretched out her arms immediately to grab her clothes.

As for Jack, he did not even bother to look at them. Instead, he walked up to Ivan and threw him a powerful kick, a kick that sent Ivan flying backward.

Chapter 615

Ivan was kicked back against the wall before falling heavily onto the ground. The pain crushed him inside out. Every jostle sent ripples of pain through his shoulder, back, and neck, causing him to curl like a cooked prawn.

A few more merciless kicks were thrown at Ivan as Jack approached him.

Ben did not move an inch. He stood as still as a statue, only staring menacingly at Xena. He was hoping with all his heart that he would not witness the scene that he hated the most. However, he could not avoid the truth anymore.

Xena put her clothes on quickly and returned Ben's stare. "Ben Taylor, you can't completely blame me for this. You can only blame yourself and your uselessness. Do you think I'd be with Ivan if you weren't a useless piece of trash?"

"F*ck!" Finally, Ben exploded. He could not hold back his rage any longer as he gave her a few heavy slaps across her face. He snarled, "Shameless f*cking b*tch! Pretending to be all elegant and pure in front of me every day! You're just a nasty, filthy witch who does dirty deeds behind people's back!"

"You! How dare you hit me!"

Xena clasped both hands over her cheeks, scarcely believing her eyes. With a look of despair, she said, "Ben Taylor, how could you! I'm fortunate that I decided not to give myself fully to you. You're a grown man, yet, you'd hit a woman? Luckily, I've yet to marry you. Otherwise, I'd suffer from domestic violence in the future!"

The heartache tormented Ben and he raised his arm high again. However, his movement stopped midair.

On the other hand, Xena was staring straight into Ben's eyes with a hateful sneer on her face. "Just hit me! Stop being a useless gnat and hit me! A grown man who'd beat a woman? How can I be with a person like that? Besides, I've been with you for two to three years now and I've never seen a hopeful future from being with you! Especially back then, have you even bought me a branded bag before? Or perhaps some decent clothes and lipstick?" she provoked.

Ben's tongue was tied by a series of questions. He stood frozen. At this moment, he actually began to

believe that he was at fault.

Selena, who stood behind Ben, could not stand the situation anymore. She went forward and served a few slaps on Xena's cheeks.

"F*cking b*tch! What right do you have to hit me!"

Xena was soaked in anger. She knew inside out that Ben loved her very much, so naturally, he would be reluctant to beat her. For a long time, Ben was even afraid of her.

Nevertheless, she never thought Selena would come forward and slap her!

"Aren't you a shameless slut? Indeed, my brother was not wealthy before, but every time he had something good, he'd share it with you! The money he's been saving up was always for you to go for your karaoke sessions or to the internet café to enjoy yourself! During the years that you two have been together, how much have you contributed?

"You're a gold digger and this is an iron fact! You approached Ivan and slept with him for his wealth! How dare you shamelessly shove all the blame onto my brother now!"

After Selena finished barking at Xena, she wheeled around and spoke to Ben, "Ben, why are you still standing here with a puzzled look? End her right now! Trash like her should be eliminated immediately. Don't tell me you want to keep this rubbish to celebrate the new year? Have you forgotten the agreement with Jack? Today, you must act like a man!"

"Kill me if you dare!"

Xena raised her head, staring straight into Ben's deadly pupils. "I don't love you and don't want to marry you. That's because I think you're incapable! You're a useless piece of trash that only knows how to play games all day. What's the use? Moreover, I'm not even married to you, I'm just your girlfriend! I have

the freedom to be with whoever I want to be!”

“Shameless!”

The more Ben thought, the angrier he grew. He slapped Xena hard before pushing her down on the bed. His hands were around her neck, choking her. “I—I’ll kill you! I’ll kill you today! You f*cking gold digger!”

Anger rose in Ben like a tide. His bloodshot eyes were full of wrath and he looked as though he had emerged from hell. “I’ll end you! F*cking shameless b*tch!”No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 616-620

Chapter 616

“Ben Taylor, you son of a b*tch! It’s a consensual relationship! What right do you have to kill her? You can’t blame Xena just because you’re a piece of useless sh*t!” Ivan yelled. He spat out a mouthful of blood after receiving a few kicks from Jack, yet he could not hold himself back.

After all, Xena had helped him a lot, and there was much affection between the two of them. He truly did not wish humiliation and death for Xena.

Besides, he was hoping to enjoy the scene of introducing Xena as his girlfriend in front of the Taylor family. He wanted to see how anger and rage consumed Ben and Selena alive.

Xena was struggling underneath Ben. Her body was getting feebler and feebler, her face turned blue and it seemed like she was about to die.

However, Ben could not bring himself to kill her in the end.

Warm tears blurred his vision. He let go of Xena and fell to the side, mentally and spiritually destroyed.

Xena clutched her throat and could not stop coughing and gasping for air. She was panting heavily.

“Brother, what are you doing? How can you just…”

Selena was at a loss for words. Xena was about to breathe her last breath, and Ben could have avenged himself! Yet, her softhearted brother decided to give up at this critical moment.

“Sis!”

Ben lifted his head with reddened eyes. He was fighting back his tears until he could no longer hold them anymore. Tears ran down his cheeks like a river. “Can someone really kill the one they love with their whole heart? She betrayed me, and my heart broke, but…but, I can’t bring myself to kill her. I love her beyond everything. I just can’t do it! And she’s right, I’m useless, I’m not capable at all. I don’t even dare to take someone’s life!” he managed to breathe out some words with a tone of despair.

Selena suppressed a tremble inside her. She understood Ben’s feelings very well.

Yes, Ben was right. He loved Xena too much. Even though the other party had wronged him, for him to kill someone he loved the most was a little too cruel and inhumane.

Xena, who had recovered from the previous episode, took the advantage of the timing and got up and rushed out the door. She was afraid that if she was a second slower, Ben would change his mind.

As Xena ran out of the room, Selena breathed out a sigh of defeat and sat down on the side of the bed, feeling helpless.

She could fully understand Ben’s feelings. It was already arduous for Ben to let go of this deeply rooted affection, what more killing the one he loved?

Perhaps, Ben would feel better in a few days.

Ivan, who was lying on the ground, spat out another mouthful of crimson red blood. His face had been beaten blue and black.

“Enough. Let’s go. You’ll beat him to death if you continue!”

Selena switched her attention over to Jack and Ivan and sighed tiringly. She walked over to Jack and pulled at his sleeves, asking him to stop the beating.

“Ivan Taylor, listen to me clearly. What happened today is due to what you did in the past. You reap what you sow. You can find whoever to sleep with and have an affair with, but you went for Xena. What does that say? I think you did it deliberately!”

Jack also understood that if he killed Ivan merely because of a consensual secret affair, he and Selena would not be able to justify themselves before Old Master Taylor. Besides, if he were to tell Old Man Taylor about the poison, no one would believe him. Now that he had forced the poison out of his body, his body was as healthy as before. Nobody would believe he was poisoned as there was no evidence to prove it at all!

Chapter 617

Therefore, Jack could only pretend he was not aware of the plan to poison him.

But, he did feel a lot better now after beating up Ivan real bad just a moment ago.

“Hmph! I dare you to kill me here right now! You’d kill me just because Xena is fond of me but not Ben? What a joke! If you murder me, then pray real hard for forgiveness from my Pa and Grandpa!”

Ivan jeered dryly and shot Jack a hateful stare. “Jack, I’ll remember what happened today! And don’t you worry, you’ll regret your actions sooner or later!”

Jack was not bothered in the slightest. He walked over to Xena’s bag and plucked off the tracking device. He then held Selena’s hand and left the scene together with Ben.

Ivan could not see Jack taking off the tracking device from where he was. A few minutes after Jack and the others left, Ivan used all his strength and finally got himself on the bed. His whole body was in pain as if it was about to fall apart.

In hopes of asking Xena to come back, Ivan picked up his phone and called her, only to find that Xena had been so frightened that when she escaped the room, she left her phone on the bedside table.

“F*ck! Looks like I have to call 911!” Ivan cursed. He felt that his limbs were about to detach from his body and it was about to fall apart. He did not know how badly he was injured.

“Jack, that motherf*cker! I want to see how long that arrogance of yours can last. I bet you don’t know that you’ve been poisoned, do you? Humph! You’re strong and powerful, but you can live for at most another twenty-nine days? And when the time comes, your body will fester and you’ll die in pain. I’ll definitely take pictures of you when I witness this glorious moment of you dying in pain before me!”

Ivan muttered to himself, his tone icy cold. Then he dialed 911.

…

“Young Master Clark, Young Master Clark, bad news! Somebody’s beaten Ivan up, and I don’t know what his condition is right now. What should I do?”

After Xena escaped the horrific hotel room, terror thundered down on her. Even until now, she was shaking in fear.

She quickly thought for a moment before speeding toward the direction of Ken Clark's residence to look for Ken.

"What? What just happened? Tell me everything from A to Z!"

When Ken had fully understood the whole incident, his brows furrowed. "Wait, speak slowly. Tell me the details, who beat him? The Taylor family is now a second-class family, and with the fame and glory the Taylor family had received during Old Man Taylor's birthday banquet, who on earth would dare to go against Young Master Ivan at this point in time?

"Jack, the b*stard!"

Anxiety vibrated through her being as she continued, "The incident happened like this. I had planned to go on a secret date with Ivan tonight. I don't know what I did to make Jack and Ben so suspicious of me. Besides, I was extra careful when I went out. I truly don't know why and how on earth they knew my whereabouts. They tracked me to the hotel, and then Ivan and I were caught on the spot by two of them and Selena Taylor…"

Once Xena breathed out the last syllable, she cried aloud. "I was almost killed by Ben. Luckily, he couldn't do it in the end and loosened his grip around my neck. Only then did I manage to escape. I didn't bring my phone with me when I ran out, and I didn't know what else to do, so I could only come here to find you!"

"Don't worry. I've thought about it. I don't think Young Master Ivan would die."

Ken went silent for a moment and then a disdainful smile hung over his face.

"No way. How can you be so sure?"

Her brows knitted together. “Jack is a hot-headed and simple-minded guy. He can do anything!”

“If it was just Jack at the scene, this one-brain-cell brat might’ve ended Ivan on the spot without hesitation!”

Ken chuckled aloud and then added, “But Selena was there, too. So, he wouldn’t kill Ivan. He’s Selena’s cousin after all, and if Jack killed him because of this, it would be difficult for them to justify themselves before Old Master Taylor. Furthermore, Ivan is the main person in charge of the South Hill Real Estate projects. Killing Ivan wouldn’t be a good thing for the Taylor family, at least not for now!”

Xena finally breathed a sigh of relief upon hearing Ken’s words. “Jack and the others should’ve left by now, but I’m still afraid. Could you please get several bodyguards and come with me to the hotel?”

Chapter 618

“I—I’m coming along?”

Panic throbbed inside Ken when Xena requested him to take some bodyguards and go with her to the hotel. His face sank in an instant.

He knew very well in his heart that no one in the Clark family possessed combative skills that were on par with Jack’s, not even the number one bodyguard of the Clark family—Dan Jameson. Even if he brought a bunch of bodyguards with him, they would not be able to touch Jack at all, not even the corner of his shirt.

Especially now, knowing that Jack was burning with anger. Plus, he was a simple-minded brat who had a close relationship with the Goddess of War. All in all, they did not dare to offend Jack at all. If Jack wanted to beat him, he could only swallow it and blame himself for having bad luck.

“What’s the matter? Young Master Clark, are you afraid of him?”

Xena was taken aback and felt something was off.

“Afraid of him? Humph! What a joke! He’s merely a good-for-nothing adopted son-in-law, why should I be afraid of him?” Ken sneered dryly, but he was obviously suppressing the fear in him.

After thinking for some time, he then added, “I’ll make a call to him first. If Jack left the scene, he’ll answer the phone, provided he’s not severely wounded.”

Xena nodded in agreement at Ken’s plan. It was a feasible plan.

Ken speedily moved his fingers on his phone, dialed Ivan’s numbers, and waited patiently.

“Hey, Young Master Clark! Goddammit! I was beaten by that motherf*cker Jack and I’ve called nine-one-one. I don’t know where the heck Xena went!”

Ivan’s voice came out from the phone’s speaker.

Upon hearing Ivan’s voice, Xena immediately snatched the phone from Ken, “Ivan, I’m here with Young Master Clark! I went to seek help from him to get you out of there! Are you okay?”

“Still alive. It seems like Jack didn’t dare to throw heavy blows. After all, I’m the Young Master of the Taylor family, so he wouldn’t dare throw hard punches. He wouldn’t dare kill me!”

Ivan breathed a sigh of relief. He managed to stand up and could walk around the room now. Although his whole body was aching, the injuries were not severe. They were only bruises on the surface.

Nevertheless, the blue and black face that he had now made him feel too embarrassed to return to the Taylor Residence or the company. If he went back in such a state, he would have to endure all the shame and gossip from others.

Besides, should his father ask why Jack had attacked him, he could not possibly tell his father that it was because of his secret affair with Xena and they were caught on the spot in a hotel room.

“Okay, alright! We’ll come over immediately. My phone and bag are still in the room!” Xena hung up the phone, sighing in relief.

“Son of a b*tch! The b*stard Jack’s really sneaky and cunning. How did he manage to track you down and catch the both of you?” Ken cursed out loud. He turned his head towards Xena and his eyes went up and down, scanning Xena’s alluring figure. He had to admit, Xena’s body was well maintained and the clothes she put on tonight were short and provocative as well. Ken could not stop the perverted thoughts from popping up frantically in his mind right now.

“Alright, let’s go! I’ll call some bodyguards over and we’ll go to Ivan’s place together to inspect the situation!”

Ken discreetly glanced at Xena’s boobs and his adam-apple jumped. “It’d be better to keep tonight’s matter as a secret. To Young Master Taylor, it’s an extremely embarrassing episode!”

“Don’t worry. I’ll keep my mouth shut!”

Xena bobbed her head. At the same time, she thought she had noticed Ken’s burning stare on her chest. Her cheeks were suddenly kissed pink at the thought, yet she put on a smile, pretending to not have noticed it.

Ken entered his residence and soon, came out with several bodyguards behind him. They got into cars and drove out.

Xena quickly skipped towards them and got into the car as well. The cars were heading in the direction of the hotel.

Meanwhile, Selena and Ben had already returned to the villa.

Chapter 619

Ben stayed silent the whole way home, as though sadness had stolen his words. It was obvious that dread and sorrow had been growing inside him since the earlier incident.

“Brother, I understand if you can’t kill her. After all, you’ve been together for so long!”

Selena wheeled her head around, looking at Ben who was in the backseat. She continued, “But, this is the last time you’ll be grieving. The next time we see her, you can’t stop us from wanting to kill her. After all, this woman is too cunning. Not only did she cheat on you, but she also attempted to poison your brother-in-law!”

Ben remained silent for several seconds before he finally nodded. “Don’t worry, Sis. I understand now. I was useless before, and too naïve. I don’t behave like a grown and mature man. I don’t even have a decent job! To her, I’m still a hopeless, unrecyclable piece of trash!”

His muttering halted at this moment. Then, a voice came out from his mouth again, “But, to kill her…I really can’t do it! In the future, it’ll be fine with me as long as you don’t kill her in front of me. I believe I’ll stand up again soon!”

“I’m really glad that you can think in this way!” Selena replied, her eyes teary.

Ben suddenly thought of something. “Oh, right. By the way, is Jack okay? How’s his body?”

“Don’t get too preoccupied. If Jack didn’t have the solution, he wouldn’t have drank the poisoned water.”

Before this, Selena assumed that Jack's medical skills were just average, but right now it seemed that his skills were more than that. He was a miraculous doctor, but Selena was not sure if Jack possessed the medical knowledge for other illnesses and if he could treat them.

The car stopped outside the villa. Ben flashed a bitter smile and hobbled into the house alone.

"Selena, what happened to Ben? He doesn't seem right to me. Where did you all go?" Fiona came out from the villa and questioned Selena, feeling uneasy.

"Sigh. Xena, this slutty woman. She cheated on Ben with Ivan. I truly didn't expect that Ivan's the man she's been seeing!"

A heavy sigh escaped from Selena's mouth. If it were someone else, they would have killed him on the spot. She never expected it to be Ivan Taylor!

"What? No way! How's that possible?"

Fiona's expression morphed into one of horrified surprise. She could not believe her ears.

However, when she thought of the melancholic and solemn look on Ben's face, coupled with Selena's bad mood, she could not help but gulp hard. "Are you sure?" She questioned, again.

"A hundred percent! We caught them in the middle of the act in a hotel room!"

Selena released a defeated sigh. "What have I been saying? This woman's not so simple, yet none of you believed me. Do you finally get it now?"

Selena walked into the villa after dropping her last word while Jack followed her back to their room.

“You must kill Xena, that b*tch!”

Back in the room, Selena could no longer suppress her irritation about the situation. “It’s not only because of my brother, she poisoned you too! That f*cking piece of sh*t!”

Jack nodded and responded with a gentle smile. “To kill her, it’s as easy as A-B-C! Your brother couldn’t do it just now, but I can, right? Doesn’t she love money? And there she thought she’d become wealthy after marrying Ivan? I’ll let her taste her own fruit! I’ll make sure she knows that even if she married Ivan, she won’t be anywhere close to ‘wealthy’. She’ll realize that Ivan is her worst choice!”

“You mean you’ll make her regret everything and kill her after that?”

Selena was slightly taken aback. She tilted her head slightly to the side and asked.

“Yes, my dear. Did you not hear what they said in the hotel room through the tracking device? Ivan has been wanting to get rid of us because he feels that you’ll compete with him for the Taylor’s inheritance. I know you’re not interested in it at all, but now I think we should snatch it!”

Jack chortled sarcastically. “Because this will be the best revenge for Ivan and Xena!”

Chapter 620

“But, I’m not interested in Taylor’s inheritance at all! I’ve never thought of competing with him!”

Selena’s forehead puckered, lines forming between her brows. “I just want to live a peaceful life. Plus, the money we earn monthly is more than enough for us to live comfortably. We have a villa, and also cars! I truly enjoy the life we’re having right now. As for the Taylor properties and assets, Grandpa Taylor already entrusted them to Ivan from the beginning, so he’ll definitely pass everything over to him. As for whether or not Grandpa Taylor wishes to give me some of it, I truly don’t care at all!”

“My dear wife, you’re too simple and pure.”

Jack giggled happily and wrapped his arms around Selena’s waist. “Dear, you’re kind-hearted and it’s not a big deal to you. How Grandpa Taylor distributes the properties, you have no interest at all, I’m sure. The thing is, Ivan doesn’t think so! For a long time, he always felt that Grandpa Taylor always treated you very well and that you’ll eventually take what belongs to him! He’s been holding a grudge against you, and even bullying you and Kylie!”

Jack paused for a few seconds and then continued, “Now he has finally become the general manager of the company. Naturally, he wouldn’t want to share any of it with anyone. If you married a rich man, you wouldn’t be competing with him for the assets anymore. He’s worried that he might need to share a part of the Taylor properties with you, so that’s why he made Xena poison me!”

After Selena listened to Jack’s detailed analysis, she was at a loss for words. “I get what you mean. I’ve been forgiving him and letting things slide due to our blood relationship, but he’s never done that for me. He’s never thought of letting us live. So now, it doesn’t matter whether it’s for Kylie or you—I’ll fight him!”

Jack nodded in agreement. “Furthermore, Ivan’s not as good as you in managing businesses. If you let him take over the company, I’m afraid that not long after, the Taylor properties and assets will all be gone. He’ll make sure that everyone’s efforts go into the drain. At that time, Grandpa Taylor will be so pissed, he might get a heart attack and die!”

“Yes, you’re right. He’s never thought of letting us live. I’ll make sure he feels the same! I, Selena Taylor, am not a paper tiger!”

Selena nodded as memories from the past few years flashed in her mind. Ivan had not only bullied her and impeded her from finding a job in other companies, he also bullied Kylie! She only tolerated and swallowed it down because of her kind heart.

At first, Selena thought that since Jack had returned from the war and both of them had found decent

jobs with the Drake family, Ivan would tone down his behavior for a bit. Hence, she decided to let all his past deeds stay in the past and never brought them up again.

Now, Selena realized that she was being too naïve and ignorant. Ivan had never treated her as one of the Taylor's at all. He did not only cause harm to Jack, but also her brother.

Ivan was rich and possessed a certain amount of power in Eastfield. It would have been easy for him to find a woman to play and sleep with, but instead, he went for Xena. It was so obvious that he did it deliberately to cuckold Ben!

"Well, it's getting late. When you have time, please visit Grandpa Taylor more often. His attitude toward us has changed a lot after his seventieth birthday banquet!" Jack said, bobbing his head.

The couple quickly took a warm shower and went to bed.

At this point in time, Ivan was lying on a hospital bed, taking some medicine and hooked to an IV drip.

"Sigh! Xena, you're too careless! How didn't you know you were being followed!"

Ken, who was sitting beside the bed, sighed loudly and reprimanded Xena.

"I don't know what's going on, too! I even took extra steps to make sure I wasn't followed! I really can't fathom how they knew of my whereabouts!"

Xena released a heavy sigh. She was worried. "I'm done for! Although Ben spared my life this time, I don't think Jack will. I think his hatred toward me now is beyond any imaginable level. If he gets the chance, he'll definitely end my life!"

Xena knew very well in her heart that Jack had spared her life twice. The first time was during the

incident outside the city. Jack had shown her mercy as she was Ben's girlfriend.

However, she used her sneaky mind and successfully blended into the family again. Jack did not seem to mind.

Today, it was Ben who had let her go. Jack was not able to kill her in front of Ben, too. That marked the second time.

But now that she had left Ben completely, she could no longer return to that family. Every plan and every deed had been exposed. She truly believed that the next time she saw Jack, he would no longer show her any mercy.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 621-625

Chapter 621

"Don't worry; just stay close to me these few days. They willingly participated in yesterday's event, so they can't explain their actions if they kill you." Ivan smiled bitterly. "Luckily Jack didn't know that you fed him poison. If he knew about it, he wouldn't have considered so many other things."

"What? Jack had drunk the…the poison?" A surge of unadulterated joy began spreading throughout every inch of Ken's being when he heard this piece of information.

After all, he believed he would be the one to have Selena once Jack was out of the picture. He had waited for this day for a very long time.

He was initially worried Xena would fail since Jack was rather smart and could catch onto what Xena was planning. He never thought Xena would succeed at feeding Jack the poison without being caught.

"Yes! How's that, Young Master Clark? Am I reliable?" Xena saw how Ken's expression lightened up right after he heard about her success. "You seem so excited! Don't you think you should reward me well?"

Ken had a tight smile on his face. “Some other time,” he quickly dismissed. “I’ll definitely treat you to a meal some other day.”

“Don’t forget this promise of yours!” the gleeful Xena chirped at him.

“Oh, yeah. How did you manage to do it? Tell us about the specifics. Neil still doesn’t know about the current situation, so I’ll tell him all about it later. He’d definitely be over the moon when he hears about this!” Ken was so happy that he nearly bust out a dance.

“Alright, here’s how it went down…” Xena began, and she relayed the entire story to them.

“Excellent!” Ken slapped his thigh after he heard what had happened. “If that’s the case, then that means Jack doesn’t know he’s been poisoned, does he now? He doesn’t even know that his life is in danger! Let’s just wait and see how he dies after this month!”

Ivan—lying on the bed—grinned at this as he spoke, “That’s right. Young Master Clark, Jack said that he wants to prepare an extravagant birthday party that’ll stir the entire town. That day happens to be the day of his death, too. Don’t you think that’ll be a day of celebration for us? Selena’s birthday is his death anniversary…! Oh, I get excited just thinking about it!”

“It’s such a drag that this guy is still alive right now. I really wish he’d drop dead as soon as possible!” came Ken’s honest reply laced with disdain. He was genuinely hoping Jack would succumb to the poison much faster.

“About that, Young Master Clark, there is a way for Jack to pass on early,” Ivan spoke up after a moment to himself. “Jack had dug a hole for himself when he killed the Xenos family’s young master of Sky City, Quil Xenos. This Xenos family is a big family and is much stronger than the Drake family. Now that Jack has been poisoned, his body will get weaker over time and his combat ability will weaken day by day.”

“What do you mean?” Ken prodded, his heart leaping in joy when he was catching onto Ivan’s train of

thought.

Chapter 622

“It’s very simple. Young Master Clark only needs to pay the Xenos family a visit and tell them how Jack killed their young master. That way, the Xenos family would know who the killer is,” conspired Ivan.

“Jack has an indisputably strong combat power, but now that he’s poisoned, you can ask the Xenos family to take action after a few days. That way, their chances of succeeding in getting even would increase,” schemed Ivan with a nonchalant grin on his face. “Of course, this is if you’re in a rush to see Jack die as soon as possible. If you’re not, then you can wait and see how he suffers from the poison.”

Ivan paused for a moment before he added, “I’m in no rush, really. The entire Taylor family’s business is under my management, and the company needs me more than ever!”

“Alright, it’s getting quite late. Let me call Neil and tell him about this over some drinks,” Ken spoke. “This will surely make a good conversation!” The smile on Ken’s face did not once waver since he knew Jack had been poisoned.

Once he left the hospital and entered his car, Ken rang up Neil and invited him out to some drinks.

…

“Young Master Clark, why do you ask me out so late at night?” huffed Neil once he arrived at their meeting spot. He had been under the weather lately as Jack had become increasingly hard to deal with.

Moreover, Neil began to believe he and the others would no longer have the chance to win over Selena’s heart. After all, the Taylor family had become a second-class aristocratic family, and Old Master Taylor acknowledged Jack as the Taylor family’s son-in-law.

Jack's status was not below theirs as he was acquainted with the Goddess of War and had even saved her life. Apart from that, they knew that Sharon George harbored feelings for Jack, and Jack overshadowed them completely in the matter of showing off to others.

To rub salt into the wound, many people in this town were still talking about Old Master Taylor's seventieth birthday.

"A superb matter! An extremely happy matter!" Ken grinned oddly.

"Really? Things that are good to you might not be that way to me." Neil smiled bitterly. It seemed that Ken had a change of luck and struck gold or something. Still, what did this have to do with him?

He never expected Ken's positivity to continue as he insisted, "Don't worry. You'll be just as happy when you hear what I'm about to say!" Ken paused here before saying, "But you'll have to pay for the bill tonight!"

"F*ck!" Neil was speechless. "Young Master Clark, when did you become so stingy? You were the one who called me out for drinks, and now you're asking me to pay the bill?"

"You'll feel that paying the bill is worth it when you know what this is about! It's also big and good news for you!" Ken smiled and walked inside. "Of course, it's fine if you don't want to know about it. I'll pay the bill and not tell you about it!"

"Alright, alright! I really don't know what to do with you. You've caught my attention and now you're telling me that you won't tell me about it?" Neil was speechless. "Come on, tell me about it. I really want to know what it is so that I can be happy about it too!"

"Jack drank that poison. He drank half a bottle of that mineral water bottle in one go. Do you think that the amount of poison he took was enough?" Ken started laughing loudly and patted Neil's shoulder. "How's this? Are you happy, Brother?"

Chapter 623

“Jack really drank that poison?” It was too good to be true for Neil as he broke a slow smile. “F*ck! That’s good news alright! He’s poisoned! This poison is a potent one and can cause his body to weaken continuously without him knowing it. He’ll die miserably after a month…!”

“How about it? It’s not too much for you to pay for this news, right?” said Ken as the grin never left his face.

“Of course it’s not too much. I’ll pay for it! F*ck… Jack’s dying soon. The gods must be on my side right now!” Neil laughed happily.

A plan began to formulate inside Neil’s mind. Once Jack was out of the picture, he would ask Ken out and eliminate him.

After all, Ken was acquainted with Selena for the longest time and used to have a good relationship with Selena. Neil was good-looking and prepossessing, but he did not have such a deep relationship with Selena like Ken.

Michael was the least of his concern; a fat pig like him would never get Selena. Hence, once Jack died, Ken would have the highest possibility among the three pursuers.

Neil had nothing to fear so long as Ken would be out of the picture after Jack was gone. He could use money and his own true heart to win over Selena. She would be very distraught after her husband’s passing, but his passion would surely change Selena’s thoughts about him. She would surely throw herself into his arms!

“Then let’s drink more today,” came Ken’s cool-headed reply. “I’ll tell you the details of the situation in a bit. This Xena can be rather useful in things like these. She actually completed something that we kept failing to complete!”

“Yeah,” replied Neil, “and everybody says bimbos are dumb. I never thought that Xena could be quite

quick-witted and Ivan to have quite good insight. We've finally gotten rid of Jack!" The excitement was getting the best of Neil as he took his cell-phone out and said, "Let me call Ivan. The more the merrier, and we can treat this as an early celebration! This is our celebration dinner!"

"It's best if you don't call Ivan right now. Jack had beaten him up, and he's now in the hospital with Xena taking care of him." Ken laughed awkwardly.

"How's that possible?" Neil was surprised. "Why was he beaten up? Could Jack have known about this matter? That doesn't seem right… if Jack knows that he's been poisoned, wouldn't he ask Ivan for the antidote? Wouldn't he kill Ivan if he doesn't have the antidote?"

"Don't worry. While he was beaten up, it wasn't about this matter. Jack knew about him and Ben, and he's found out some things between him and Xena. That's why."

Once they entered a private room, Ken sat himself and patted Neil's shoulder. "Do you want Jack to die much earlier?"

"What kind of question is that?" Neil scoffed. "Of course I want that. I wish that he's dead right now! I've been waiting so long for this day, but now, I'm hopeful! One month… He'll be six feet under after a month!" Neil's eyes glimmered with hope.

"I'm glad to hear that. In that case, follow me tomorrow to a place called Sky City…" Ken chuckled and told Neil about how Jack killed Xenos family's Young Master Quil Xenos of Sky City.

Neil was thrilled when he heard this. "Great! Let's go early tomorrow. If that's the case, Jack's strength would decline. Coupled with the fact that the Xenos family's masters are rather strong, he's definitely a goner!"

The two of them enjoyed their drinks to their hearts' content. The next day, they brought several bodyguards with them and left for Sky City early in the morning.

Chapter 624

Several cars drove toward Sky City the following day.

Sky City was quite far away from Eastfield; it took them two to three hours to even get there by car.

Neil, Ken and the others eventually reached the outskirts of Sky City around twelve at noon.

Sky City was indeed two to three times bigger than Eastfield. Many powerful yet rather extreme people were in this city, thus Neil and the others made sure to be at their best behavior as they walked into this foreign city.

They first found a restaurant and had a simple meal before they started asking around about where the Xenos family was at.

“What? There are two Xenos families here? One is huge and the other is powerless?” Ken was startled at the information given by a passerby they were asking.

The passerby smiled bitterly. “Yes, Sir. There used to be two Xenos families here, but there’s only one left now. Someone had wiped out the bigger Xenos family, and their properties were then sold at a very low price. This person had just left. I think he’s heading for Eastfield!”

“Could Young Master Quil have come from this wiped-out Xenos family?” Ken gulped; he could not believe what he had just heard. This seemed too coincidental. They had just reached this place, yet they were faced with the fact that the Xenos family had been eliminated while their properties were sold at a low price.

“Yes. You guys know Quil?” The passerby was surprised. “Their family was really powerful, but they’ve crossed someone they shouldn’t have. Sigh! What a terrible fate!” The passerby paused here before he continued, “Nonetheless, this person had morals. He only killed the important figures and martial artists in the Xenos family, but most of the workers, children, and old people were released.”

“Young Master Clark, what’s going on? How can the Xenos family be wiped out when they’re so powerful? Apart from that, this person had already returned to Eastfield!”

Neil was speechless, and he took a deep breath after mulling it over. “Goodness me… Could it be that Goddess of War, Lana Zechs wiped out the Xenos family?”

Ken felt that this was highly possible. “Could Jack have speculated that the Xenos family would avenge their fallen young master and, because of that, sought for the Goddess of War’s help to end their family? He might’ve done this to avoid future trouble.”

Neil nodded. “This seems possible. Despite having returned the favor to Jack before, Jack had in fact saved the Goddess of War. Had Jack begged for her help, the Goddess of War won’t have the heart to turn him down.”

Ken was extremely angry. “F*ck! Jack truly is too cunning and prognostic. How could he have foreseen this? He doesn’t have any true strength, relying only on others to do his dirty deed! Doesn’t he feel that troubling the Goddess of War and wasting her precious time is a very shameless thing? He’s too much!”

“Why would he want his dignity if he wants to stay alive?” Neil sighed inwardly. It seemed as though their plan to end Jack’s life much earlier than anticipated, had failed.

“Sirs, what are the both of you talking about? What about the Goddess of War? What about Quil?”

The passerby was stunned. “Do you think the Goddess of War is here? How’s that possible? The person who took out the Xenos family was a very strong middle-aged man!”

“Man?!” Neil and Ken instantly looked at each other. What was this? Was it not Lana?

“Yes, a man. I heard that he’s a very powerful King of War, but I’ve forgotten his name. I wonder how the Xenos family offended a King of War!” came the passerby’s reply.

“King of War?” Neil and Ken were baffled even more. This was getting out of hand.

Chapter 625

Ken was silent for a good few seconds before he took out several hundred dollars and gave it to the passerby. “Thank you for your time, Brother. This is for you to buy cigarettes.”

“Wow, thank you! Thank you, Young Master!” Elated, the man gratefully took the money and walked away.

“Young Master Clark, why do I not understand what’s going on?” Neil looked at Ken, who was in front of him, and prodded, “What should we do now?”

Ken sighed. “What can we do? Everybody in the Xenos family is dead, so we can only return to Eastfield. Jack got lucky this time; he dodged a disaster. Still, it doesn’t change the fact that he’s poisoned. We don’t even have the antidote, and it’ll be too late by the time he notices something is wrong.”

“Yes. It seems that the Xenos family’s young master has offended a King of War. He must’ve been very angry to have dealt such an attack on the Xenos family,” surmised Neil. “He’s ruthless, alright! What we didn’t expect was that this King of War helped out that good-for-nothing Jack.”

Ken also nodded. “This Young Master Xenos should’ve died, though. I heard from Xena that he even kidnapped Fiona and herself, wanting a three-way with them, but Jack managed to get there in time and killed the young master before it happened.”

“Yes. He might’ve offended the Kind of War’s daughter, and people came looking for him after they investigated what happened!”

Everyone then returned to Eastfield, dispirited at the turn of events.

After a discussion between both men, they bought some fruits and decided to visit Ivan when they reached Eastfield.

…

It was evening when they got to the hospital.

“Young Master Hugo and Young Master Clark, why are you here?” blurted Xena when both men suddenly appeared, walking toward her and Ivan.

“Oh, we’re here to pay Young Master Taylor a visit.” Neil smiled bitterly before sitting down at Ivan’s side. “We went to Sky City today. Regrettably, the Xenos family had offended a King of War from Eastfield, so before we could even look for the Xenos family, the King of War had already sought them out and killed the entire family. We went through all that trouble just to be disappointed.”

“F*ck me… Jack is really f*cking lucky!” Ivan was dumbstruck when he heard this.

“Nevermind. We can only wait it out at this point. We have twenty-eight more days.” Ken was unhappy, still. He planned to count down these 28 days.

Ivan mulled over his thoughts for a while, and a smirk slowly appeared on his face. “Oh, right. Didn’t Jack say that he’d give Selena an extravagant birthday party? Since this guy loves to gloat about that, why don’t we make things difficult for him so he’d stop halfway?”

Ken soon understood what Ivan meant. “Are you saying we should publicize on his behalf, and that it’ll be much better if everyone in town knows about this?”

“That’s right! Young Master Clark’s really smart. You would think of this…” Ivan nodded. “I’ve thought about it, and publicizing this event is possible. However, your copies must be attractive. You can try to employ those aunties and ask them to help send flyers on your behalf. I believe that this would quickly catch everyone’s attention. Still, this is certainly not enough. We still need to advertise the event on the same-city website…”No.1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 626-630

Chapter 626

On the following day…

Jack and Selena had just finished breakfast when Ben walked toward them.

Head lowered, Ben stood silent before them—and for a good, too—before he muttered, “Brother-in-law, Sister, I have something to tell you guys. Can we talk outside?”

Jack and Selena looked at each other and wondered if Ben’s mood had improved. They nodded and walked outside with Ben.

Once they stepped outside to the yard, Ben then spoke, “I intended to get myself a job but I’m not highly educated, so I don’t know what I can do. I do plan on opening a shop, but I don’t have any money.”

Ben paused for a moment before he lifted his head and attested, “I’m a man, not a loser in the eyes of others. I want to grow. I now realized I had been a complete bastard who only knows to fool around and take things for granted. When our family was poor and my sister picked up trash just to earn a living, I took the money you earned just to play video games…!”

Jack and Selena glanced at each other, noting that Ben had matured overnight. He was able to reflect on his actions and assessed them carefully.

“I didn’t even have the power to punch the person who stole my lover,” Ben blurted. “I can’t even win a fight with Ivan…!” Ben laughed a bitter laugh, without mirth behind it at all. “It’s meaningless.”

“Why don’t you start a business?” offered Jack after careful deliberation. “I can sponsor you no matter what type of business you want to do, and you never have to worry about paying me back. Just take the money and give it a go.”

Jack did not expect Ben to turn down his offer with a shake of his head. “I don’t want your money. We have two Rolls-Royce Phantom given to us by Miss Sharon because Brother-in-law helped cure her condition. As Mother is getting her car license, leave one for her. I’ll sell mine and get money from it. I want to try operating an internet cafe near the university town. I think that this business suits me as I love playing games.”

Selena nodded. “It’s quite a new car and was gifted to you. Go ahead if you want to sell it, but remember that you won’t have a car once you sell it.”

Ben smiled. “Don’t worry, Sis. The car is so new and it’s worth over seven million, so it won’t be an issue to sell it for six million. I’ll still have some money left after I set up the internet cafe, and by that time, I can simply buy a car at a hundred thousand budget. I now realize that we need to be frugal even though we’re rich. And to think I used to plan how to treat Xena with the finer things in life… Now it’s just a joke to me!”

Both Jack and Selena nodded after they heard what Ben had to say. It seemed that Ben had changed a lot after the turn of events, and it was a good thing for him.

“The car is yours, so feel free to do anything you want with it. Be courageous and do whatever you want to do,” assured Selena as she patted her brother’s shoulder. “Even if you lose money, your sister and brother-in-law will still support you.”

A thought then occurred to Jack as he spoke, “By the way, Ben, don’t tell Mother and Father that Xena poisoned me. I don’t want to worry them. I’m honestly fine. These people had been day-dreaming when they thought that they could poison me.”

“Alright, Brother-in-law. Honestly… Everything is my fault. You and Sister have always been telling me about this, but I thought of her as a kind and nice person. I didn’t even want to face the fact that sometimes, I do feel like something’s wrong with her. It would’ve been better if I broke up with her earlier. I was the one who almost cost Brother-in-law his life!” Ben sighed and made his way to his car.

Jack saw two bodyguards strolling the grounds not far away from them and waved them over.

“Quickly, the Supreme Warrior is calling out to us!” Elaine was happy when she saw Jack waving them over.

Orchid shot Elaine a sharp glare. “Shh, quiet! Don’t address him as Supreme Warrior and call him Master instead. Wouldn’t the Supreme Warrior scold you If others overheard that?” Elaine carefully eyed her surroundings. If others knew that Jack was indeed the Supreme Warrior, Jack might not be able to get the peaceful life he wanted.

Chapter 627

“Ahem, ahem! Sister Orchid, you said it twice…” Elaine bit back a smile before she walked toward Jack.

Orchid was embarrassed. Elaine said it first!

“Master, what can we do for you? Are you going shopping with your lady? Do you need our protection?” gushed Elaine the moment she stood before him.

“My brother-in-law is going out to do something. Both of you, follow him and protect him,” came Jack’s unexpected command.

Ben was startled when he heard this. “No, no, I don’t think there’s a need for this. I’m a man. Why do I need to be protected? It’s normal for Mother and Sister to bring two bodyguards with them when they go out, but why do I need to bring bodyguards? It’s so weird!”

“Hey, look at you! You have a bruise on your forehead and it’s obviously from a fight. How dare you say that you don’t need protection because you’re a man? I think that you’re the one who needs protection the most!” countered Elaine, feeling unappreciated and frowned upon. The Supreme Warrior finally appointed some work to her so she must complete it, no matter what happened. She had to show her best performance.

Ben never thought that a bodyguard would fight back. He rolled his eyes at her. “If that’s the case, I don’t need two female bodyguards following me, right?”

“Hey, are you looking down on women?” Elaine raised her head and said provocatively. “If you’re so capable, fight with me. If you win, I won’t follow you. Otherwise, we stick to Master’s plan; I’ll be watching you from afar and protecting you!”

“Y—You’re a bodyguard! I… I’m a man, and I won’t fight with a woman!” came Ben’s reply, an indirect concession to the female guard.

“See, don’t simply speak when you’re incapable!” Elaine smugly replied, her hands crossed at her chest.

“I…” Unable to come up with a comeback, Ben immediately opened the car door and entered the car.

Both Elaine and Orchid immediately boarded his car. “Let’s go, Young Master Taylor!”

“Why are you sitting beside me?” quipped Ben when Elaine sat at the passenger’s seat.

When he looked at her closely, this woman was pretty and had a good figure. With the seatbelt on, her figure looked sexier. Her long, fair legs were extremely attractive.

Ben was slightly embarrassed when such a beauty sat beside him.

“So what if I sit by your side? It doesn’t affect your driving!” Elaine rolled her beautiful doe eyes as she grinned cheekily. “Hey, who hit you by the way? Do you want me to help get revenge? Don’t worry, I’ll do it for free!”

Chapter 628

Ben was taken aback at this woman’s strong offer, and he had a tight smile on his face. “Nevermind,” he declined. “Even if I do want vengeance, I should be the one to do it.”

“Alright then. I’ve no idea that you still have a backbone!” Elaine then mulled things over and suggested, “If that’s the case, I can help you get stronger whenever you’re free. I’ll train you well and upgrade you, in a sense. What do you think?”

Ben was silent for a short moment before he nodded, a sign of agreement it was. “Sure, I’ll treat it as increasing my physical fitness!”

Back at the residence, Andrew and Fiona walked toward Selena and Jack.

“Selena, where did your brother go? Did Xena really get together with Ivan? We couldn’t sleep at all last night because of this. We’re afraid that your brother might lose his mind and do something foolish!” Fiona frowned, worry written all over her face. “From what I’ve noticed, he didn’t even have breakfast.”

“Don’t worry, Mother,” Selena assured her, an equally convincing smile on her face as she did. “I feel that this is a good thing for him!”

“A good thing? Your brother’s fiancee got together with another man and almost killed him. Our entire family’s worried about him, and you say this is a good thing?” Fiona was speechless; she had no idea why Selena would say something like this.

“Such a woman had never been good enough for my brother. I’ve told him before that Xena’s just a

golddigger and that her social connections are rather shady. Apart from that, she had questionable relationships with several people in the motor robbers. It's just a shame that none of you believed in what I had to say."

Selena laughed before she added, "Brother has finally grown up. He even went out to sell his car."

"Sell his car? Why does he want to sell it? That's a very expensive Rolls-Royce Phantom!" Fiona was getting more stupefied. She did not know what happened to Ben.

"Well, Brother wants to earn a living himself. He wants to sell the car and open an internet cafe…" Selena then explained the situation to Fiona and Andrew. "Jack wanted to give him money to start a business, but he declined Jack's offer. Doesn't that sound like he's so much more mature now?"

"Definitely! This guy has finally matured after such a blow. I hope he can move on from Xena soon." Andrew nodded in satisfaction, obviously satisfied with Ben's new mindset.

"I better not meet Xena anymore after this! This girl's daring enough to bully my son. I'll slap her so many times if I ever see her again…! She's gone overboard this time!" fumed Fiona, her hands at her hips as she spoke.

"Mother, I've already slapped her. If this isn't enough to satisfy you, you can slap her all you want the next time you see her!" Selena commented, a small smile on her face as she did.

"Alright, let's go to work." Jack smiled, and they soon left in their car to go to work.

…

Jack eventually reached the Drake family's residence and walked toward Tanya's villa.

The last thing he expected was to see Tanya, Yvonne, and Sharon walking out from the villa once he was at the entrance.

Jack was dumbfounded when he saw Sharon. This woman had been visiting a little too frequently these days. She was obviously here for him.

Chapter 629

“Jack, you’re finally here. I missed you so much!” Sharon instantly ran up to Jack and hugged his arm, shaking it as she did.

Jack instantly felt something was wrong. He almost passed out when he turned to look at his side.

Why did Sharon wear a deep V-neck dress for no reason?! It was quite obvious she was trying to seduce him.

More importantly, this woman was doing this on purpose. She practically glued herself against his arm and rubbed against it incessantly. Any other man would fail to hold himself back.

“Really? Why do you miss me?” Jack smiled awkwardly as he tried to push her away gently. He then walked backward and made sure there was a good distance between the two.

“Do I need a reason to miss you?” Blush seared across Sharon’s cheeks.

This was, in fact, Yvonne’s idea; she knew no man did not like this. Since Sharon had explicitly expressed her feelings for Jack, Yvonne thought she could push her to be bolder. She could dress in an exposing way and act exaggeratingly.

Apart from that, Yvonne also told Sharon that she should always be in close proximity with Jack to bring them ‘closer’ together.

“Oh…” Yvonne was speechless when she saw this situation. While she did ask Sharon to be proactive, dress skimpily and get closer to Jack, she never thought Sharon would go overboard and latched onto Jack like that.

“She’s rather proactive. I hope this works!” said the embarrassed Tanya.

Both of them smiled before walking toward Jack.

With her smile still on her face, Tanya began, “Jack, we’re going to the amusement park later. As always, we’ll be bringing only you, and no other bodyguards! Don’t worry, I’ll pay for everything if you accompany me out to play!”

“I’ve never really been to places like that before!” said Jack with a faint smile. “Since Miss Tanya wants to go, then I’ll spend time and accompany the pretty lady!”

“Oh, not bad! I didn’t know that you, an old antique, know how to praise women!” Tanya was rather elated when she heard Jack’s choice of words. Jack praised her as the pretty lady. Did he genuinely feel she was pretty? If that was the case, was there a chance he was harboring a slight infatuation with him?

If Jack knew his nonchalant words caused Tanya—this young and pretty lady—to have unrealistic fantasies, he might be speechless.

“Old antique? Am I that old?” Jack laughed; this was his first time being called as such.

“I mean the way you think. I’m not saying you’re old!” Tanya glanced at Jack secretly. She recalled the time when their lips accidentally met when they were wrestling; his lips on her red ones.

Their lips met not once, but twice. She got very shy whenever she thought of that moment, and her

heart would beat so much faster.

Tanya bit her alluring bottom lip and added, “Actually, slightly older men like you are mature and steady men. These men are the most charming!”

It was then when Jack recalled the time when he drank with Yvonne, and at that same time, he saw Yvonne’s abashed face. His expression immediately turned weird.

What happened that day was purely an accident. He had no idea something like that would happen. When he saw Yvonne’s abashed expression, was it possible that she had fallen for him because of what happened that night?

If that was the case, this would be troubling, and Sharon was already making him feel uncomfortable. How could Jack handle it if Yvonne was feeling the same way? Jack suddenly had a bad feeling at this moment!

Chapter 630

“Yes, Tanya. What you say is very true. I feel that he’s charming and manly. I wouldn’t fall for him at first sight if he wasn’t!” It shocked them that Sharon would still go up to Jack—even after he basically tried to get away from her—and look at him like an obsessed fan.

Jack felt like he was slowly losing his mind. “Miss Sharon, you’re a woman. You need to have the reserved attitude of a woman!” This was Tanya’s house, thus he could only give her sound advice instead of chasing her away.

However, it seemed difficult for him to change her mind in such a short time when he saw her proactive ways.

“Really?” Sharon frowned. “Do I need to be reserved? Will you like me if I’m reserved? But didn’t Yvonne say that men like proactive women? She even told me that it’s difficult for men to pursue women, but it’s easier if women pursue men!”

Jack's face suddenly darkened. "How clever you are, Yvonne Drake. You even taught people how to get into a relationship, huh?"

Flabbergasted, Yvonne sharply turned to Sharon and growled, "Sharon, why are you such a fool? Damn!"

Once she realized what had happened, Sharon sheepishly replied, "Sorry, my bad. I was careless and blurted everything!"

She then quickly added, "I'll pay for everything later when we go out to play! I'll pay for food and the amusement park tickets!"

"That's much better!" Yvonne folded her arms across her chest, inwardly pleased at the offer.

"Let's go!"

…

The four of them eventually arrived at the amusement park.

Jack did not think they would see a few aunties handing out flyers once they parked the car and reached the park's entrance.

"They're handing out flyers on such a hot day… That must be difficult!" The four of them knew that these people had a difficult job, thus they accepted the flyer without much thought.

Jack thought that this was a flyer about the amusement park's activities so he merely gave it a once-over.

He was stunned when he actually digested the content.

“What’s going on?” The trio also looked at their flyer once they noticed Jack rooted on the spot.

“Is this for real? Jack, you’re so romantic! Did you design this poster?”

There were some romantic heart-shaped photos on the flyer, and there were words typed in as well.

[Look forward to it! It’s 27 more days to the birthday of Taylor family’s No. 1 beauty, Miss Selena Taylor!]

[The Goddess of War’s savior, Jack White, will hold an extravagant birthday party in 27 more days! We welcome everybody to the party!]

Such were the words written on the flyers.

“I’m so envious of Selena! This is so romantic of Jack! He’s promoting the birthday party like this!” Sharon looked at the flyers and looked at Jack with hearts in her eyes. “Not only are you manly, but you’re a gentle and romantic person too!”No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 631-635

Chapter 631

“I never thought you’d publicize your wife’s birthday party like this. Jack, your wife will surely be so happy with this!” Truthfully, Yvonne envied Selena to an extent. Jack was already advertising the party far before the event started. She would love it if a man were to treat her this way.

“It’s just that, these…words are too high-profile, too much. There’s even a countdown to the date of the party. Moreover, it’s stated here that you’re the ‘Goddess of War’s savior’ and that your wife is ‘the

Taylor family's number one beauty'…" spoke Tanya, a tight smile on her face as she did.

"Don't you think your advertisement is a little too exaggerating? With this, the entire city knows that you're the one who saved the Goddess of War's life."

Jack merely offered a dry smile, though his expression was darkening. "I didn't make these flyers. While I do want my wife's birthday party to stir the entire city and this was the surprise I prepared for her, I didn't make these flyers."

"Could your family have done this? How about your mother? Fiona? Andrew?" Tanya had initially assumed Jack could pull such a romantic move, but the more she thought it over, the more she realized that this was not the case. Jack, after all, was a rather low-profile kind of guy.

If the Goddess of War had not admitted that Jack saved her life before, nobody would have known about it until today.

After all, this was something to be proud of. If somebody else was in Jack's shoes, they would have told everybody about this.

Jack, however, had never taken something like this as his capital to show-off.

"That can't be; they're old. Why would they stick their noses in my business?" Jack's wry smile dropped into a frown. "Not many people know about this as I've just mentioned it briefly the other day. Even Old Master Taylor doesn't know about it. Why would somebody publicize it?"

"Jack, look!" At this moment, Yvonne pointed at a taxi that drove past the park.

Jack's eyeballs nearly popped out of their sockets when he realized what it was about. What was going on? Why were such publicizing words continuously broadcasted on the taxi? If that was the case, did the entire city know already?

“Jack, are you lying to us? You must’ve spent a lot of money on this intense advertising. Why would anyone do this, apart from trying to be romantic to your wife and for the surprise factor? Who’d spend money to publicize this party on your behalf without any reason?”

Tanya looked at Jack with a grin as though she saw through him. “Don’t pretend and deny it. You’re really good at acting and keeping secrets about this event.”

Jack was speechless. Why did that—‘don’t pretend and deny it’—sounded weird?

He thought about it. “There’s only one other person who knows about this: Xena…:”

‘But if it was hers and Ivan’s idea, why are they willing to spend money to help publicize this party?’ Jack thought to himself. ‘They don’t have any motive to do this. I’ve given Ivan a beating, so they must hate me. Why are they still spending money and doing something like this?’

A thought then occurred to Jack as his eyes lit up. He knew why.

Only him, Selena, and Ben knew he was not poisoned, while both Xena and Ivan were sure he was already poisoned.

If that was the case, the medication would take effect around thirty days from the day he consumed it. Was it a coincidence that the day so happened to be Selena’s birthday?

So, both sly dogs—Ivan and Xena—would want to make a big fuss on this matter. They were waiting to see how Jack would fail on that day. What sort of a scene would it be if Selena’s birthday became his death?

Now they even went ahead to publicize the party. Even if it was canceled, Jack and the Taylor family

would be the ones to lose face.

They would be even happier if the party happened as usual.

“What an amazing scheme this is.” Jack smiled coldly once he was able to conclude everything. It seemed that the other party was destined to be disappointed.

Chapter 632

“What do you mean by ‘scheme’? Do you know who it is?” asked Tanya right that instant.

After all, Tanya’s grandfather had told her to help Jack with everything she got. This person had an important identity. She felt like Jack was getting more and more elusive. It was this mysterious feeling that made her want to know him more. She believed that as long as she proactively involved herself with Jack, she would then know his true identity.

Judging from Jack’s response to this flyer, it seemed as though this publicity was done as a deliberate attack against him. Still, she had no idea how such publicity could be considered as an attack.

“I don’t know who it is, but I have my suspicion. Nevermind, let’s go! it’s time to go in and enjoy ourselves!” Jack smiled indifferently and walked toward the amusement park’s entrance.

Tanya frowned as she looked at Jack’s figure.

She could see that Jack had made his guesses but did not want to say anything.

“Stir the entire city?” After mulling it over, Tanya soon realized that ‘stir the entire city’ here meant that the more the event was marketed, the more extravagant the event had to be.

This meant that he had to spend more money. If Jack only wanted to spend around ten to twenty million, that would not stir the city. Not even a hundred million could achieve that.

“Wouldn’t Jack lose face if this advertisement was marketed too heavily? These people wanted Jack to lose his face and unable to bear the cost of such a grand event so they could make fun of him! This person is a low-life, alright. They rather spend money to help Jack market the party so that Jack would lose face!”

A cold smirk appeared on Tanya’s face when she came to that revelation. The other party might not know this, but the Drake family had been thinking of ways to get into Jack’s good books. It did not matter if it was ten billion or a hundred billion; they would take any amount and help Jack as though that amount was nothing to her family.

Tanya knew Jack must have thought of this, too. She ran up to Jack, catching up to him, and assured, “Don’t stress over it, Jack. It’s a good thing that other people helped you with the advertisement part. They helped cut costs!”

“That’s right!” Jack smiled, not wanting to say anything else.

At this moment, Sharon had already bought four tickets and gave one to each person.

Meanwhile…

“Who’s that guy?” said one random park-goer. “F*ck, I envy him… He has three beautiful ladies around him,” he muttered.

The other people immediately looked over and were also very envious when they saw what he saw. “Hey, all three of them are beauties! One of them not only has a nice figure, but her eyes look so enchanting too. I wonder what these women taste like.”

“Don’t even think about it. These women looked like they come from rich families, so it’s only natural that this man is just as rich. Otherwise, why would these women go out with him? Normal people like us can only look!” One of them smiled bitterly. He looked at Tanya’s long legs and under her short skirt, and he gulped wantonly.

Chapter 633

These park-goers could only look at them from afar.

Meanwhile…

A man, not far away from where they were, overheard their conversation. This man had several young men and women with him. “Isn’t that Miss Drake?” the man spoke.

He knew it was Tanya the moment he noticed her, and he was startled to see her here. “Tsk, tsk! And it seems Tanya’s not the only one here. The beautiful Yvonne and Miss Sharon are also here. What a sight this is; makes me jealous just looking at it.”

“Really? And who’s that man, Young Master Lowe?” One of his companions, a man from a second-class aristocratic family, asked with a nonchalant smile. “He’s so lucky to be with three such beautiful women.”

Young Master Lowe came from a family that was rather rich. Still, his family was a third-class aristocratic family, thus the only thing he could afford to do was look at Jack’s female companions, even though he liked pretty ladies like Tanya and Yvonne.

He knew there was a chance he would fail should he even tried to pursue these ladies.

After all, these ladies have turned down many young masters without being given a chance.

“Well, this lad has been getting quite the attention lately. This is the person on the flyer!” Young Master Lowe had one of the flyers he received at the entrance in his hands, thus he and his companions discussed it.

They never thought they would meet this person so soon.

“Oh, so this is the son-in-law who married into the Taylor family!” The man suddenly understood what had happened. “F*ck… He’s really lucky with the opposite gender! He’s able to be with beautiful women no matter where he went, and even his wife is a beautiful woman. What a life that must be… If only I was him!”

The man then studied the flyer closely and sourly commented, “Stir the entire town? He’s just a son-in-law who married into the family. Can he actually achieve that?

“I heard that he’s a head commander in the army and had already spent over a hundred million on other things. He shouldn’t have much left with him; probably around tens of millions. Can he genuinely host a party that’ll ‘stir the entire city’? This advertisement should’ve cost him millions since it’s all over the place!”

“My thoughts exactly. I saw several bus stations with this advertisement in the advertisement spaces. They must’ve been put up just recently!”

“He needs to spend lots of money on the advertisements,” blurted a young woman among the company. “How much money has he left for the birthday party?”

“That’s right, that’s absolutely correct. If the aim’s to stir up the entire city, doesn’t it have to be several levels higher than the Old Master Taylor’s seventieth birthday dinner? At the very least, it should be held at a very expensive bar. Old Master Taylor’s birthday dinner wasn’t hosted in an extravagant way, but it did stir up the entire city!” Another man nodded. He felt that Jack was being too much despite not having that much money.

“Let’s not bother too much about this; there’s just a few days left until the party. We’ll go and take a look by then. I want to see how he can stir up the entire city!” Young Master Lowe would be lying if he said he was not being bitter at this point. “He might make a fool out of himself by then. It’d be shameful if this party is poorly held.”

Back to Jack and the young women…

“Let’s go and play the carousel first. There aren’t many people queuing there!” Tanya smiled and looked at Jack as though asking for permission. What she did not know was that they had attracted many envious eyes and hatred for Jack.

Jack, however, kept staring at a middle-aged man with dark glasses and a cap not far away from him. “That man over there seems like trouble.”

The man had a cane at hand that he kept pointing aimlessly on the ground. He seemed to be blind yet was tailing behind a group of good-looking women.

Chapter 634

“How’s that possible? He’s just a blind person,” countered Tanya as she looked at the blind man. “What’s wrong with him?”

“Yes. It’s rather sad that he turned blind at this age,” muttered Sharon as she looked at the same man, too.

Jack internally facepalmed when he heard the reasoning of these women. “Look carefully,” Jack insisted, “there’s something wrong with his cane. Try and think why is he constantly behind girls wearing skirts?”

Yvonne was the first one to react after hearing Jack’s login, and she instantly sped toward the supposed blind man with the cane. “F*ck! This guy is a pervert,” she snapped, “and he’s secretly taking photos!” Yvonne hated perverts like this.

“How’s that possible? He’s actually…!” Sharon was just as angry when she finally realized what was going on. Sharon, along with Jack and Tanya, followed behind Yvonne.

Yvonne was the first to walk up to the man and she pushed him down to the ground with such force. “You pervert!”

“Ouch!” cried the man once he collided against the ground. He then yelped, “Help! Somebody’s bullying the blind!”

His cry for help attracted the attention of the group of young women walking in front of him, and these women turned around to look at them. The man’s yelp had also attracted the attention of other passersby.

The young women, not knowing what was going on, felt utterly terrible for the blind man. “What’s wrong with you? Why are you bullying a blind man?!” scolded one of the women that the supposed blind man was tailing behind, and Yvonne felt bile coming up to her throat.

“Yes, this is too much! Is this woman crazy? Why did she push the blind man onto the ground without any reason? She’s really ruthless! What’s in that head of hers?!” Several other people began hurling insults and angry remarks toward Yvonne.

“Ouch, ouch! It’s so painful!” The man pretended to feel around on the ground before he got a hold of his cane. He then tapped it several times against the ground before stretching it under Yvonne’s dress.

Yvonne became more irate once she noticed his indecency; this bastard was extremely daring. He had the gall to stretch the cane under her dress when he saw so many people were speaking on behalf of him.

“Bastard!” Yvonne immediately walked away and hid away from him.

At this moment, two men squeezed their way out from the crowd and scolded Yvonne, “What’s wrong with you, woman? How can you scold the blind person when you pushed him down?!”

Unable to put her thoughts into words, Yvonne walked up to the man and took his cane away. “I won’t let him leave. He’s a pervert, and this cane is his instrument to take photos! I saw him secretly taking photos from under their skirts!”

“Hey, why is this woman snatching my cane?” The blind man immediately yelled loudly. “It’s bad enough she pushed me down, but she even stole my cane and lied about me!”

“How’s that possible? This blind man is a pervert who secretly takes photos?” Some of the people started suspecting what Yvonne said. After all, who would push another person down without any reason?

“Yvonne’s telling the truth! He’s a piece of trash that takes photos of girls under their skirts!” Tanya pushed her way through the crowd as she yelled in defense of her cousin, Yvonne.

Chapter 635

“That’s right. We saw everything with our own eyes. She gets nothing good for being kind to you guys.” Sharon also walked forward. “How can you all say she’s bullying the blind person when she’s actually helping you?!”

It was then when a man among the crowd studied Sharon carefully before he exclaimed, “Hey, isn’t this the eldest young miss of the George family? I heard that she had turned into a pretty woman. I wouldn’t be able to recognize her if I hadn’t heard her voice. She’s really a pretty lady!”

“This pretty lady must be Miss Tanya then, right?” another man exclaimed. “I was wondering why she seemed so familiar… It’s really Miss Tanya!”

Some other people began to recognize Tanya as well, thus began the exchanged comments about her. They had no idea that they would meet such an important person.

“I believe what Miss Tanya said. Miss Tanya is a member of the Drake family, the daughter of the richest man in Eastfield. Why would she lie to us?” a woman spoke up in Tanya’s defense.

“Yes. I heard that Miss Tanya would always stand up against injustice, and she’s very active in doing charity work. Why would she lie to us?” Several other women also went along with what she said.

The blind man started panicking when he heard his and instantly asserted, “Hey, it’s all a misunderstanding. It’s a misunderstanding! This is just a cane! I can’t even see the road, so how could I have purposely stretched this under a skirt? Even if I stretched the cane under their skirts, that’s just an accident. How could you say that I did it on purpose?!” He paused here before continuing, “Apart from that, I’m blind. If you say that I’m secretly taking photos, why would I take photos? I can’t even see them!”

One of the three men who pushed their way through the crowd immediately said, “Yes, this woman misunderstood him for sure!”

Another man stepped up to the plate. “Young lady, you’re really kind, but how can you wrongly accuse someone else? Being heroically is the right thing to do and proclaiming positive energy isn’t wrong, but accusing someone baselessly is bad!”

The last of the three went to the blind man and spoke, “Hey, Brother. It’s better if you don’t walk around in such hot weather. There’s a slightly cooler place over there. Come, let me take you there.”

“Oh, thank you! So it’s true that there are more kind people than bad ones in this world!” chirped the blind man in a seemingly grateful manner, and this moved many of the onlookers. Indeed, there truly were more kind people in this world.

“What…?” Yvonne was speechless. Was it possible that she and the rest were wrong about him? What

this blind person said seemed to make sense. Why would he take photos of other people's underwear when he was blind? This did not make sense even if he was a pervert.

"Wait!" Just as they were wondering what to do next, Jack pushed his way out from the crowd and stopped the man.

The man supporting the blind man was slightly stunned. He smiled earnestly at Jack. "What is it, Brother? Is there anything you need from us?"

Jack smiled indifferently. "You can't leave yet because I have unanswered questions. Why would he, a blind man as he claimed, keep stretching his cane under the skirts of girls wearing them? Why didn't he stretch his cane to those wearing long pants?" Jack chuckled. "Don't tell me that it's coincidental!"

The blind man immediately became defensive. "Young man, don't talk nonsense. I can't even see, and you're smearing my name. How would I know what's going on?"

"So you're blind, are you? Do you think that you can pretend to be blind by wearing a pair of dark glasses?" Jack laughed and immediately stretched out his hand to take the man's dark glasses.

Startled, the man's body jolted at the abrupt move. He then began to move his hands around as though looking for something. "Young man, where are my glasses? Give it back to me! Why do you want to snatch a blind man's things?!"No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 636-640

Chapter 636

Jack smiled coldly inside when he saw how the blind man behaved. He directly punched toward the person's nose.

However, Jack punched at a very slow speed this time.

“What are you doing?” The man supporting the blind man immediately caught Jack’s arm. “Not only did you rob a blind man, but you also want to beat him too? It’s unreasonable for you to act this way! You’re too inhumane!”

“if my guesses are correct, it seems like the three of you are working together with him! Am I right?!”

Jack laughed. He slightly waved his hand and got rid of the other party’s hand. He looked at them sharply. “Go on, continue acting!”

The two men immediately walked forward. “Young man, you are going overboard. What nonsense are you talking about? To us, you’re just a crazy person. What are you talking about when you say that we’re a group? It didn’t matter that you bullied a blind man, how dare you smear our name as well?”

“That’s right, hit him!” said the man who caught Jack’s arm earlier.

The three of them immediately surrounded Jack.

However, Jack kicked them and they immediately flew out. They dropped on the ground several meters away and each vomited a mouthful of blood.

“How’s this possible? This man is too strong!” The people surrounding them exclaimed as they were extremely scared.

“It seems like he’s one of the Drake family’s bodyguards. The people of the Drake family are really strong!” A man said.

“So he’s the Drake family’s bodyguard. No wonder he would take action!” Another woman also said.

The blind man turned around to take a look. He was so frightened that his face turned pale while he pointed his cane left and right. He acted calm and pretended as if he knew nothing.

“Ah!” Jack held his hand in a fist and directly punched it at the man.

“Oh god, I’m sorry. Please forgive me!” The blind man’s legs weakened and he knelt in front of Jack when he saw Jack punching at him.

“Aren’t you blind? How do you know that I’m about to punch you?” Jack smiled coldly. His act of pretending to hit the person did cause this blind man to show his true colors. After all, he knew how scary Jack was after seeing how far those three flew after being punched.

“Brother, forgive me! I’m not blind, I’m really not blind!” The man knelt and begged for forgiveness. He obviously dared not continue pretending to be blind.

“Oh my god, they are really a group!” Somebody said angrily after they discovered the truth.

“It seems that we’ve misunderstood the girls. These people are really perverts!”

The girls who the blind man secretly took photos of were extremely frightened. They misunderstood Yvonne earlier and this caused them to immediately feel extremely guilty.

One of them immediately ran over and picked the thin cane up. She looked at the handle and said in surprise, “Oh my god, there’s a button here. There must be a small camera at the bottom.”

Many people surrounded her and after a while, they finally saw a small camera at the bottom part of the cane.

Jack smiled indifferently. He directly stepped on the thigh of the man who pretended to be blind. “Speak,

where are the photos you took?”

The man said with a bitter expression on his face. “The photos I took…took are automatically saved inside. There’s an internal memory card inside used to save this!”

Chapter 637

”What are those photos for?” Jack smiled coldly and continued asking. “I don’t think it’s for you to look at by yourself, right?”

The man looked at the others who used all of their energy to climb up from the ground before nodding. “Yes, this is for the four of us to look at. We were curious!”

“Curious?” Jack’s expression turned cold and he exerted even more force on the person’s thigh.

“Ah!” The man immediately shouted loudly. He was in so much pain that the veins on his forehead popped up.

Crack!

The noise of bones breaking could be heard so clearly.

“Oh my god, such great strength!”

“Yes, this Drake family’s bodyguard is not a simpleton. It’s so scary that he can break this man’s leg with one step!”

“offending the people from the Drake family is suicidal. If a member of the Drake family wants to kill someone, it’s no different from killing an ant!”

The people surrounding them started discussing what happened.

“Miss Tanya, Miss Sharon, and this pretty sister, thank you all very much!” The group of girls immediately walked forward to thank Jack and the others.

“you’re welcome. I was born like this. How could I do nothing when such an incident was happening before me?” Tanya laughed and continued saying, “However, it’s best if you guys are more careful in the future. Don’t empathize with others when you think that they are blind. All of you have to observe carefully if this person is really blind or is just acting blind.”

“Yes, thank you Miss Tanya for teaching us a lesson. We understand!” The group of girls nodded.

Jack took the cane over and held onto it with all his strength. The handle of the cane then broke into several pieces after which he took the internal memory card out.

Jack knelt and said to the man in front of him after breaking the internal memory card. “Tell me the truth or you might not be able to protect your other leg!”

“Ah!” The man almost fainted in pain. He kept yelling loudly as it was too painful. How was it possible for him to continue speaking to Jack while gritting his teeth? It was considered good that he had not fainted.

The other three men wanted to surround and attack Jack. However, they were so frightened that they dared not speak a word when they witnessed this scene. They lowered their head and stood there, wishing that they would disappear on that spot.

“It’s best if the three of you come over and explain yourself. If you don’t tell me the truth, I will kill all four of you!” Jack waved at the three men.

One of them gritted their teeth and when he raised his head, he seemed more confident. “Young man, it’s best if you don’t cause this matter to escalate. You’re just a bodyguard of the Drake family. Nothing good will come to you if this matter escalates! Apart from that, wasn’t the internal memory card already destroyed by you? What do you still want to do?”

“are you guys threatening him?” Tanya started smiling before Jack could say more. “He’s the bodyguard of my Drake family. You guys even wanted to take photos of my sister, Yvonne. You’re not offending her, it’s the Drake family. Do you think that we’ll be afraid?”

“If this issue is escalated, the Drake family might not be able to bear the consequences!”

They originally thought that these men would be afraid when Tanya mentioned the Drake family.

However, they had no idea that this man still smiled coldly and said. “Have you heard of the Kingston Hall?”

“So you guys are from the Kingston Hall! No wonder you are so arrogant!” Tanya’s face darkened after she heard what they said.

Chapter 638

”are you afraid now? Other useless families might be afraid of your Drake family but the people from the Kingston Hall are not afraid of you!” The man started laughing loudly when he saw Tanya’s darkened face.

“Is the Kingston Hall strong? Stronger than your family?” Jack frowned and had a serious expression.

He knew clearly that Tanya was a fearless person and constantly loved to create a sensation for others. He had never seen her, afraid.

However, Tanya was afraid of what was going on today. This made him feel weird.

Was it possible that these hidden powers were stronger than the Drake family?

Tanya looked at Jack and explained softly, “This Kingston Hall has a huge number of followers and is considered as one of the more notable powers in this Eastfield. Apart from that, they have quite a large amount of good martial artists. Their power can fight against that of our Drake family. If we really start a fight with them, we do not have the grasp as to who will win!”

Yvonne also immediately nodded and said, “Actually this is not the most important part. The most crucial point is that we’ve got a mutual understanding with these powers in the dark. They develop theirs and we develop ours. It’s fine as long as nothing happens.” Yvonne paused here before continuing. “Of course, it’s nothing if it’s just small friction. However, if this matter escalates, there will only be negative results for us. Even if they don’t go all out and have a big fight with us, our power will also be weakened by then.”

Tanya smiled bitterly and said, “Yes, if our Drake family is weakened, the title of Eastfield’s number one family would need to go to somebody else.

Jack understood something after he heard them. It seems that the Drake family was not afraid of them, they did not dare to fight them and their ability was almost the same. If this was the case, how could they fight?

However, he might not be afraid even though the Drake family was afraid.

Without considering how to get rid of the Kingston Hall, whatever these people did could not be let go so easily.

Right now, the other party was very arrogant and everybody was looking. The effect of this on the people was very huge.

“So, let’s just drop this matter here and let us leave, alright?” The man did not dare continue instigating Tanya, he only wanted to leave quickly with the guy who pretended to be blind.

“do you have other photos? How’s it possible that the ones I destroyed are the only ones that you took? What about those that you took previously?” Jack smiled and asked.

“Young man, don’t go too overboard. You’re just a bodyguard. What good will provoking a power like Kingston Hall bring you?” The man stared at Jack angrily and threatened him.

“I’m just a bodyguard but I’m also a man. I can just be involved in whatever I don’t like whenever I want!” Jack shrugged his shoulders as if he did not care. “I heard that there are many small groups under a big organization. You shouldn’t be from the Kingston Hall, right? You are only from some small groups under their control, right?”

The gaze in the guy’s eyes looked unstable when he heard what Jack said. Jack had obviously said the right thing.

He said after looking at the people beside him. “Young man, don’t say whatever you want. Although we’re from the Green Sky Hall under the Kingston Hall control, we are not people you can provoke!”

Chapter 639

”Green Sky Hall?” Jack thought about it and said, “Fine, you guys can go back first. Go back and tell the people in the Green Sky Hall that I’m going over tomorrow. Today, we have to settle this issue and come up with a good reason. If not, you can’t blame me for any action that I will take!”

“Fine, young man, you were the one who said this. Tomorrow, come to our Green Sky Hall alone and we’ll be waiting for you there!” The man relaxed inwardly. At least, he and his friends could leave right now.

In his eyes, Jack was trying to find a way out when he said that he was going to the Green Sky Hall alone to cause them trouble.

He estimated that Jack was not daring enough to go to the Green Sky Hall alone tomorrow. After all, if he really provoked the Green Sky Hall, that meant that he was provoking the Kingston Hall. Whatever Jack said was to find a way out for himself so that Tanya, who liked to come forward, would not be embarrassed.

After he said those, the three men picked the other man up, whose leg was broken, and quickly left.

“You…you won’t really go tomorrow, right? There’s nothing scary about the Green Sky Hall but if you go there and make things worse, it would be considered as provoking the Kingston Hall!”

Yvonne could not help but remind Jack. “After all, I heard that the head of the Green Sky Hall and the head of the Kingston Hall are relatives. Because of this reason, the Green Sky Hall is developing quickly even though it had just been set up. The head of the Green Sky Hall is an extremely domineering and cunning person!”

Jack nodded after he heard this. “Don’t worry. You guys can ignore this matter. Right now, this is my personal business!”

“Personal business?” Yvonne was embarrassed after she heard this. She was the one who rushed forward to help those young ladies. As a result, she was misunderstood and despised by so many people. Fortunately, Jack stepped in and exposed the other party in time. If not, it would be very difficult for her to do the explanation.

She was quite grateful that Jack took action just now. After all, Jack helped her, if not, it would have been difficult to explain herself.

Now, at least everybody knows that she was innocent.

She had no idea Jack would say that this was his personal matter.

“Don’t worry, Jack is very good. I’m not clear about Kingston Hall but he’s definitely not afraid of this Green Sky hall!” Tanya smiled softly and looked at Jack, who was beside her.

Previously, they hid in the woods outside the city and saw the scary scene with their own eyes. They were 300 masters from the Eagle Clan. Among them was one of the Four Fighters, the baldy.

In the end, Jack only used ten minutes to take out all the opponents.

“Alright, I’m just afraid that something will happen to Jack if he goes alone!” Yvonne was still worried so she said to Tanya. “Tanya, why don’t we tell your father about this and bring more people with us. Even if it’s just a negotiation, it will definitely be much better!”

“Yes, don’t be afraid of them. I’ll go back and tell my father about this too. I will also bring some bodyguards and go with you guys!” Sharon immediately nodded and said.

“I can go alone. You guys don’t need to worry and just enjoy playing. Didn’t you say that you want to play the merry-go-round? Why don’t you go quickly?” Jack smiled bitterly and felt warm in his heart toward the care of these three women.

Chapter 640

”This guy is really one of a kind. I’m worried about him but he seems as if nothing happened!” Sharon pursed her mouth and went to line up in the queue.

“Jack, come over too!” Tanya ran behind Jack and pushed him over when she saw that he did not join them in the queue.

“Uh, it’s fine, you guys go ahead and play by yourself. I feel that this is a children’s game and it’s too childish!” Jack smiled bitterly and was a little helpless.

“Hey, are you calling us childish?” Yvonne turned around and rolled her eyes at Jack. “I don’t care. Since we’re already here today, you need to at least accompany us and play all the games.”

“That’s right! We will let you experience being a child like us for a day!” Tanya also immediately said.

“Jack, listening to your tone. Is it possible that you’ve never been to an amusement park?” Sharon thought and could not help but asked.

Jack smiled bitterly and was slightly lamenting. “Yes, I’ve wanted to come to this place since I was young. However, my family was poor so I could only look from the outside as others played inside. After I grew up, I got too busy with work. I started sending takeaways and later on, I became a soldier. So I’ve never been to such a place,”

“Then this is just right. You can fulfill the regrets you had when you were younger. We have to play every game at least once!” Sharon said with a smile.

“By the way, Jack, where’s your father? Why haven’t we seen him? Why haven’t you mentioned him?” Tanya asked curiously after she thought about it.

Jack’s face darkened when he heard this. He said with a darkened expression, “Think of him as if he’s dead. I don’t have a father…”

Tanya and Yvonne met each other’s eyes and they stopped talking about this matter. They could see that Jack was not only angry when he mentioned his father, he had hatred in his eyes.

They did not understand what happened to Jack previously that caused him to have such hatred toward his father.

“Go, it’s our turn!” They immediately changed the subject when they saw that the door had opened and they could go to play the merry-go-round.

The three beauties took Jack and they played many games before reaching the ghost house.

“Let’s go, we can go back now!”

Tanya said with a slight smile. “We’ve played everything!”

“Yes, we can leave now as it’s not early!” Sharon also said with a smile.

“Wait, didn’t you guys say that we’re playing everything for at least once?”

Jack could not help but smile when he saw this situation. He pointed at the ghost house in front of them. “You guys haven’t played this?”

“Let’s just let go of this. There’s nothing fun about this!” Tanya said with a smile.

“Yes, it’s really scary even when you listen to the voice outside. This is not fun, let’s go!” Sharon was also embarrassed.

“I think that the both of you are too timid and you dare not go in!” Jack laughed. “I had no idea that you guys were daring enough to ride roller coasters but not the ghost house!”

“I really want to play but I come with Tanya every time I’m here. She’s not daring enough to play this and how meaningless it is for me to play alone!” Yvonne looked forward to it.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 641-645

Chapter 641

“Have you ever tried this before?” Jack said, looking at Yvonne Drake.

“Hmm, I always wanted to try it but I never got the chance to!” Yvonne said and smiled forcefully.

“Then let’s go together! I am quite curious as to what it’s like there. I am quite certain that there are no ghosts on this earth. Even if there were, I wouldn’t be afraid because I think if one was truly good, he would be able to slay any devil that may come his way!” said Jack nonchalantly.

“Yeah, let’s give it a go, but promise that you’ll take care of us if anything happens?” Sharon Geroge interjected. It was a rare opportunity to hang out with Jack, and she really would not have missed it for the world.

“Yes, if you are here, I would really try it!”

Tanya laughed too and said, “I am indeed quite curious. I heard that the ghosts are all in fact humans playing dress-up. How scary can they really be!”

“let’s go then!” Jack remarked and went into the haunted house with the three beautiful ladies.

“Ah!”

Barely a few steps into the haunted house. Sharon George had found herself scared silly and gripping Jack’s arm tightly. Her face looked as if she had shrunk, and her expression was one of pure terror.

Jack glanced to his side and felt speechless. Sharon Geroge had glued her entire body tightly to his arm. After all, he was a man, and this scene found him a little embarrassed and uncomfortable.

He thought, ‘However, I can’t just leave her especially in a time where she’s so scared. I can’t just push her away.’

Jack felt a little remorseful. He regretted suggesting the haunted house. It was his own actions that led him here, in this awkward situation where Sharon could take advantage of him.

“Ah!” A terrifying long-tongued ghost had appeared at Tanya’s side.

Tanya was frightened to the core and also griped on Jack’s hand. She stuck her head on to his shoulder and continued walking forward in tiny steps.

Jack felt ashamed. He thought, “Why is Tanya holding my hand? Doesn’t she feel embarrassed too?” Despite his initial thoughts, judging from Tanya’s tight grip, she was indeed really scared.

“What do we do now”

Yvonne was walking behind Jack but she was also feeling frightened as well. In fact, her palms had started to break out in sweat. However, she wanted to maintain a composed and independent image. She refused to stoop low and behave like Tanya and Sharon who were clinging onto Jack like glue. ‘How embarrassing,’ she thought.

Just as those thoughts passed her mind, a bony arm suddenly appeared from the back and tapped her shoulder.

Hiss! Yvonne almost passed out at the weight of a skeletal-like arm on her shoulder, clad in rags.

“Ahh!” she shrieked. In a panicked frenzy, she flung herself toward Jack’s back and hugged him tightly, abandoning all previous thoughts of composure and independence. She yelled, “Hurry, Jack, hurry, there’s a ghost behind…”

Jack felt really strange-these three beautiful ladies were clinging on to him like their last straw of hope!

“Alright, if that’s the case we had better hurry up!”

Jack felt the heat creeping up to him with embarrassment and hurriedly exited the haunted house. Finally, the group emerged from the haunted house safely.

The three ladies were still clinging and gripping onto Jack, with their eyes tightly shut.

“Have we exited yet? Have we left?”

Tanya shakily added, “Gosh, that was so scary, I am never doing that again!”

Chapter 642

“So scary, I am never going back too, really regret doing it!”

It was not clear if Sharon was really scared or if she was still pretending, but her body was even more tightly glued to Jack. Jack felt too embarrassed to even look at her.

“Wow, am I to believe it? Three ladies hugging one guy?”

“Heavens, I am so jealous! They are all clinging on him so tightly, and they all have really beautiful bodies. My god, that man is truly so lucky!”

“How I wish that was me. How did I not think of bringing a few beautiful ladies to the haunted house? Oh wait, I think I don’t know any beautiful ladies!”

The crowd surrounding them started to comment as they observed the group.

“My God, isn’t that woman the second young lady of the Drake family? Wow, she is hugging that man so tightly…”

“Hey, that woman looks like Yvonne Drake. Isn’t the other one Sharon George? Gosh, what a sight! I am so jealous!” A man recognized the three ladies and exclaimed in excitement.

Click! A few female onlookers had taken out their mobile devices to stealthily take photographs of the group. If these photos were to be circulated, that would really go viral. After all, it was a rare sight to see three ladies of the most distinguished families of Eastfield clinging on to a man.

“Ahem, we’re clear!”

Jack looked really awkward now that there were so many onlookers surrounding them. He felt that crawling back into the haunted house would have been a better choice.

The three women opened their eyes and saw how the onlookers were judging and perceiving them. They consciously shook themselves loose of Jack, their faces turning into a shade as red as a tomato.

“Told you guys not to do it, that was so scary!”

Tanya looked at Jack with embarrassment. “Oh God,” she thought. She couldn’t believe that she was holding Jack’s hand-to innocent bystanders, that really made their relationship seem suspicious.

“Yeah, that was really so scary!” Sharon felt scared but really excited too. She didn’t think she would have the luck to be in such close proximity with Jack.

“How unlucky of me, I was taken advantage of!” thought Jack.

The four of them prepared to leave. Jack was driving past a public bus station. Suddenly, he noticed something and remarked “No, that cannot be!”

“My God! Isn’t that you in the advertisement? Wow, are you that meticulous that you want to put up advertisements at a bus station!” Yvonne smiled bitterly.

“What can I do? I just wanted to make my wife happy!” Jack felt funny on the inside. The advertiser must have been the idiot Ivan Taylor who wanted to portray him as a joke and wanted to see him die on Selena’s birthday. Too bad for them, their plans were foiled.

Chapter 643

At that very moment, the three men who were present at Green Hall that day had returned to Green Hall after sending the man who pretended to be blind to the hospital and had found someone to take care of him.

As they entered the courtyard, one of them turned to the skinnier one of the group and said, “Monkey, that rascal said he would come tomorrow-do you think he would really show up? He’s just a bodyguard, but he must have some skills to become the bodyguard for the Drake family. I don’t think we can underestimate him!”

The other guy looked at Monkey and said, “Brother Monkey, that rascal’s name is Jack. He is the live-in son-in-law of the Taylor family. You definitely shouldn’t underestimate him. Back in those days, he actually saved the God of War. To be connected to these old legends like the God of War, do you think…”

Monkey interjected with fear in his voice, “Okay I can’t do anything about it now. All I can do is be frank with him and see what he decides to do!”

“Yeah, this time we really need to treat him truthfully and give him the photos if he needs them!”

The other two in the group nodded in agreement and the three of them continued walking inside.

“Oh, Monkey you guys are back! How was the bounty today? Did you guys get many photos taken? I will be able to sell them for a lot of money!” said Mousak gleefully—he was the manager.

Monkey’s expression sank, “Actually we did get a good bounty. There was an unusual amount of young women in the theme park with short skirts today. Unfortunately, as we were packing up and getting ready to leave, we bumped into the nosy Tanya and Yvonne Drake!”

The mustached man’s expressions also sank at the sound of Tanya’s name. He could already guess what was to follow in the conversation, “You guys actually bumped into them? Oh, this Tanya really is a justice warrior.”

He thought about what he said and added, “Oh, don’t tell me that she brought a number of bodyguards? However, I already told you guys to disguise yourselves as blind men. The cameras are well hidden too. Such advanced technology-is it possible for her to see through your antics?”

“Sigh, we also didn’t think that they would but they really did see through us. Ben is laying in the hospital with his leg broken-the doctor says he needs to amputate his leg tomorrow!”

Monkey took a deep breath and said, “Damn, they only had one bodyguard with them, but the bodyguard was just too good!”

“It’s fine, it’s over now, you can continue whatever you were doing another time!”

Mousak knew not to mess with the Drakes. He said, “It’s fortunate that we didn’t make a big deal out of it. Other than Ben’s medical expenses, he also put effort into this, I’ll give him half a million! This way he can just retire peacefully at home!”

To his surprise, Monkey smiled bitterly and said, “We also wanted to contain the situation. We even damaged everything inside the memory cards and we were also beaten up by him. What we did not foresee was that the other party did not want to let what happened today, slide!”

“What?” Mousak looked angry. He said, “F**k, didn’t you tell them that you are the men of Green Hall? Did you not tell them that Green Hall is a force to be reckoned with that belongs to the Kingston Hall?”

“How could I not have said that? I thought that they would let it go once they heard that. Unexpectedly, they pressed on even further after hearing that!” groaned Monkey, who was feeling frustrated and helpless.

After all, the head of Green Hall did say in the past that they should maintain a cordial relationship with the other aristocratic families and maintain the peace among them.

Of course, in normal situations, the other aristocratic families would have been fearful of the powerful families that lived unusual paths and would usually not step out of line.

“Tanya Drake really has some guts. Does she think she is incarnate of justice? Is she trying to start a fight between the Drakes and Green Hall? Is she not scared of Kingston Hall who is backing us?” Mousak was boiling with fury.

“No, it wasn’t because of her. Tanya was a little scared and she didn’t want to offend us. Monkey chuckled and said, “It was her bodyguard. If not for him, we would not have ended up in that situation.”

Chapter 644

Mousak looked dumbfounded. He said, “What? You mean it wasn’t Tanya Drake that wanted to make a big deal about it, but in fact, it was the bodyguard who wanted to pursue the truth? How could Tanya have agreed to that? Who does he think he is to pursue the matter further?”

“Yeah right, I don’t know what that rascal meant. He even said he wants to come and see us tomorrow and that it is a private matter for him, so he will show up alone!”

Monkey felt that this was not really possible, “I don’t know if he is just bullshitting but this rascal is not to be messed with-he is the live-in son-in-law of the Taylor family!”

“It’s him?”

Mousak heard this and his face sank even further. “I wouldn’t be concerned at all if it’s just any random bodyguard. But now that I heard the culprit is that hotheaded guy, I think we might find ourselves in a bit of a pickle.”

“Hotheaded guy? What do you mean?”

“You mean, he usually gets up to no good?” Monkey asked with a frown.

Mousak nodded. “I don’t have much proof, but we think that the retreat of the Dragon Gods from Eastfield had something to do with this Jack guy.”

“No way, the Dragon Gods were so good. How can they be afraid of him?”

Monkey shook his head in disbelief. “That’s impossible. He is just one man. How can he possess that strength or capability? I heard that the Dragon Gods left so quickly that they left behind all their assets and wealth. They were in such a hurry that they didn’t bother selling them. More importantly, there was a mysterious man of great strength who killed many members of their clan in a single night-even the best of the Dragon Gods, the masters, were killed. Mr. Howard had no choice but to flee.”

Monkey suddenly remembered something and exclaimed, “My God, brother Mousak, do you think Jack killed all those masters?”

“How is this possible?”

Mousak smiled indifferently, “I heard this rascal was just a commander. His combat skills indeed can be good, but it is not that strong. As our master said, this rascal has a good relationship with the King of War and the God of War. He most likely had help.”

Mousak paused before continuing, “Two days ago, the master was just telling me about that rascal. The conclusion was that we don’t have any evidence but we really don’t want to offend nor provoke him!”

Monkey looked worried at this point and said, “Now it looks like we’re not finding fault with him but he is coming to look for trouble with us.”

“Mm, let’s go. I will bring you to the master. You need to tell him everything that had happened in detail. Master is a smart man and will know how we can deal with this!”

Mousak nodded and brought Monkey inside.

…

At this moment, Jack, Tanya, and the ladies had driven back to the Drake family home. Just as Jack started his car and got ready to head home after a day’s work, he was stopped by a boy who rushed out of nowhere.

He saw that it was Tiger. “Tiger? Why are you looking for me?”

Jack froze as he saw Tiger’s pale and nervous expression.

Tiger got into the car and said hurriedly, “Big brother, I don’t know what I can do anymore, and I had to come and find you for help.”

“What is it? Slow down and tell me!” Jack stopped his car and asked Tiger.

“Ah, didn’t you give us a sum of money? My wife and I bought a home and we opened a restaurant with the remainder. I guess our food is really good because business became better and better after we launched the restaurant.” said Tiger after a gulp.

Chapter 645

Jack froze and asked, “Isn’t that a good thing? Why do you look so anxious and worried? Did you offend anyone?”

Tiger nodded and said, “The restaurant next to us experienced really bad business and they started to blame us. They claim that we robbed them of their business, and got some gangsters to mess with us. These gangsters come every day. They will each take up a desk and order a plate of peanuts. They sit there for the whole day and because of this, we can’t carry out our business!”

“What low lives. These people are really bullies!” Jack clenched his fist and got really angry. He could not believe that the restaurateurs next door were so shameless.

He thought about the situation and asked, “So, did the business next door get better?”

“Better my foot. There is another big restaurant on the street. They don’t dare to offend them so they take their anger out on me. His restaurant’s food is really bad so he blames me for taking his business. But since I had no business, his shop has not improved from before!”

Tiger got angrier and said helplessly, “Sigh, I really am at a loss. When they first started doing this, we thought of putting up with it. How would we know that they would actually come everyday and do this.”

“What about now?” Jack asked after a moment of silence.

Tiger said, “They are still sitting there. I used to be able to do well at night but all my customers are scared silly. The gangsters asked for a hundred thousand ‘protection fee’ then they would leave us alone. Otherwise, they will keep this up.”

“Okay, where’s your restaurant? Let’s go.” Jack started the car and drove straight for the restaurant. It was not long before they arrived. Jack stopped his car by the curb.

“We’re here!” Tiger got out of the car and pointed at the restaurant. He led Jack into the restaurant.

As Jack approached the door, he could hear laughter from inside.

“What do you say, pretty girl? Today I found a hair in the peanuts. We have already eaten a lot of peanuts. What if we get a bad stomach from this?”

One of the men with a buzz cut roared with laughter. He was sitting with one leg up on the stool. He was chewing on a toothpick and laughing cooly.

“I’m… I’m sorry. I’ll get a new plate for you? You don’t need to pay for this one!”

Tiger’s wife was at a loss for words. She could only smile and reply politely.

“F**k!”

That man slammed a pair of chopsticks on the table. “Your logic is so special. I ate your unhygienic food and you offer to get me a new plate? How much is this even? Something that costs ten dollars? You would like to get me a new plate? Do you think I don’t have ten dollars?”

“Then what do you want from me? You guys are occupying more than ten tables, I can offer it to you for free.”

Tiger’s wife was already at a loss. Tiger said he needed to step out to find a solution, but he had not even returned. She was left alone with two fearful waiters who were huddled in a corner. At this moment, she was already scared out of her wits.

“What do we want? Ah, since your husband is not here, and since you are quite pretty, why don’t you go over to the toilet and play with me?”

The man with the buzz cut stood up and approached Tiger’s wife, smacking her.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 646-650

Chapter 646

“Ah!”

Tiger’s wife was scared to death, her face turned pale and she cautiously stepped backward. “Don’t mess around with me! I’ve already told you, if my husband finds out about this, he will really murder you!”

“That is hilarious. Your boyfriend looks so soft, even if he had ten lives he still would not muster up the courage to do anything to us.”

The man with the buzz cut started roaring in laughter. He continued, “Then tell me, how do you plan on compensating me? I’m starting to feel a stomachache. I want you to accompany me to the toilet and relieve my stomachache. Otherwise, give me two hundred thousand and I’ll consider my medical bills paid!”

“Two hundred thousand!”

Tiger’s wife heard the exorbitant sum and took in a deep breath. She knew that they did not have

enough money. They could not afford to pay off these bastards. These bastards also had an insatiable appetite for bullying them-even if she did give him two hundred thousand this round, she feared that there would be an even bigger sum demanded from them in the future.

“What now? Don’t you have the money? Well, if you don’t have the money, then you should compensate me with your body!”

“Don’t worry, your husband isn’t here. I won’t tell him!”

The man with the buzz cut laughed gleefully, and approached Tiger’s wife, getting ready to drag her off and do his bidding.

She retreated backward and yelled, “No! No! The hair you found in the peanuts belongs to you! Tiger and I have really long hair. The hair you found is really short and the length is consistent with the length of your hair. It’s so obvious that you’re just finding fault and making our lives hard!”

“what proof do you have to say that the hair is mine? I don’t care. The fact that I found hair in my food is enough to hold you accountable. Otherwise, I will spread the word around that your food is unsafe and unhygienic!”

The man with the buzz cut roared with laughter and as she was caught completely off guard, he stepped forward and tightly embraced her.

“Let me go, you bastard!”

Tiger’s wife struggled against his grip. He had her in a deadlock and was about to drag her to the bathroom.

“Let her go!”

At this moment, a loud roar came from the doorway. Tiger rushed in with fury with Jack following in his trail.

The group of gangsters saw that Tiger had arrived and all stood up, looking at him like they were tigers themselves, getting ready to play with their prey.

“Oh, you’re back!”

The man with the buzz cut let Tiger’s wife go and laughed cooly. He said, “Since you’ve returned, compensate me with two hundred thousand now. If not, we’ve all lost our patience and we plan to trash this place!”

Jack heard this and laughed cooly. “Oh, trash this place?” he said. “If you guys don’t value your lives, try it!”

“Hey, looks like this eager beaver is getting ready for revenge. He even found himself a little helper!”

The man with the buzz cut laughed, “However…you only brought one man? Is he going to be enough?”

“You all want money? Come outside and fight me. If you all can win me at this fight, forget about two hundred thousand. We can give you two million!” Jack continued, “But, if you all can’t win this fight, then just admit your unlucky fate. Compensate my brother for a million in damages. You all have not only affected his business these past few days. You have even caused him emotional distress. I believe this is a small sum that you guys can afford!”

“Hey, what a big mouth!”

The man with the buzz cut laughed cooly and said, “Alright, let’s go outside. I don’t believe that my

entire gang cannot defeat you. If you lose, give us two million. If we lose, we'll give you one million!"

The gangsters were getting riled up at this exchange. They felt that this guy before them was eagerly rushing to prove himself. There were so many of them. From a number perspective, it was impossible for one man to be able to defeat all of them. Even if they lose, the compensation would only be one million. There was much more to be gained in the two million that they could possibly get. They thought that the odds were definitely stacked in their favor! What a deal they could not refuse!

Chapter 647

The group of men gathered at the entrance of the restaurant and surrounded Jack very quickly.

Tiger knew what Jack was capable of and did not feel worried at all. His wife, however, was a little worried. She asked, "Tiger, can he take on so many men? Should we just pay off these men? Otherwise, they will still come and bother us after your big brother leaves us."

"Don't worry, my big brother knows what to do. He only needs to show up once, they will think twice before messing with us in the future!" Tiger had full faith in Jack.

"Kid, do you even have that much money? Don't just be blowing your trumpet!" The man with the buzz cut cracked his knuckles and asked Jack while cracking his knuckles.

His only worry was that Jack was blowing his own trumpet and would not be able to provide the money later.

"Shouldn't you guys be worried about this?" Jack said nonchalantly. He continued, "I don't even need to lift a finger to defeat you guys!"

"you really like to talk big huh. You think you can defeat us without lifting a finger? I'm afraid you're taking on more than you can chew!"

The man with the buzz cut laughed and said, “If you are really capable of this, I will kneel before you and call you my grandfather!”

“Don’t regret your words later!” Jack retorted.

The man with the buzz cut was getting excited. He felt that this fool before him was too silly. If the kid was not going to even lift a finger, they would be able to take him on even faster.

“Go! F**k, you three go and get him! I want to see how he can defeat us without lifting a finger!”

The man with the buzz cut held back his group of men and wanted to get a taste of what Jack was capable of. He wanted to call Jack’s bluff and only asked three men to take him on.

“Ah!” Three men rushed toward Jack.

Jack jumped and made three flying kicks. One by one, the men flew several feet away and fell onto the floor in pain.

“No way!” The man with the buzz cut look dumbfounded at the scene before him. He thought, ‘Looks like this kid has got some game, he can take on three men!’

“F**k, let’s all go! Surround him from all four corners, let me see how he can take us on now!” The man with the buzz cut gave his orders after some thought.

It was obvious that this rascal was not stupid. Jack was not using his hands and the group of men was surrounding him. This time, it won’t be so easy for Jack.

All the men who rushed forward were lying on the floor in pain. They were either clutching onto their chests or stomachs, each with twisted expressions of pain on their faces.

“So what now? Since you all have lost, time to pay up!” Jack laughed cooly and said, “Don’t tell me you can’t even afford a million!”

Chapter 648

“Ouch, Motherf*cker, it’s so painful!”

The man with the buzz cut was lying on the floor with blood sprouting from the corner of his mouth. He groaned on and on. He really could not believe that there was such a master fighter on earth. The attacks were coming at him so fast that he could not even see where the kicks began. The only thing he remembered was feeling a kick on his chest and that his bum had fallen right on the floor.

“Impossible!” The boss of the restaurant next door had witnessed the exchange and thought Jack had a death wish to challenge the gangsters. Now, the scene that had unraveled before him scared him to death instead. He could not have imagined Tiger would be able to find such a powerful man to help him out.

However, he quickly thought with a cool grin, ‘Hmph, kid, you may think you got them now. This group of gangster is not your average gangster. You don’t know who is backing them. A kid like you can’t afford to offend this gang. I will just silently observe today!’

“Kid, don’t you be demanding. You’ve already beaten us to a pulp. Now, you’re demanding money from us? How illogical of you!”

Moments later, the man with the buzz cut had recovered a little and finally got up off the ground together with his men.

“ didn’t you guys promise earlier? It’s not just about the money. Don’t forget you all have to kneel and call me your grandfather.” Jack laughingly reminded the group.

“Kid, we’re not your average joes. We can consider ourselves unlucky and return your money. However, forget about us kneeling before you and calling you our grandfather. You would be stripping us of our dignity and honor-how will we continue to make a living if we do that?” the man with the buzz cut said after some thought.

“Oh, how can you men just go back on your words so carelessly? I want you to give me the money, kneel and call me grandfather-that was what you promised!”

Jack laughed and continued, “Plus, I don’t really care who is behind you or which forces are backing you. If you offend me, I will make sure to give your backers a hard time!”

The corner of the man’s mouth twitched slightly and said, “Think carefully before you demand that, don’t regret your actions later. We’re the men of Green Hall!”

“Green Hall” Jack furrowed his brow. “What a coincidence!” he thought. He was about to swing by Green Hall for a visit tomorrow. He could not believe his fate that he had met these gangsters from Green Hall today.

Seeing Jack momentarily stunned, the man with the buzz cut gleefully said, “kid. Looks like even you have heard of the prowess of the men at Green Hall? We have hundreds of men and hundreds of proficient fighters. You can fight them off slowly yourself. You may think you’re good now, but you can’t be unafraid of Green Hall!”

Having said this, he even puffed up his chest and folded his hands. He haughtily continued, “Kid, if you’re feeling regretful, just admit your mistakes and apologize. We won’t hold you accountable or pursue the matter further. Seeing as you’re a good fighter too, let’s just forget everything that has happened today.”

“Hey, you’re really cocky!” Jack laughed cooly. “You think I’ll drop this just because of the two words ‘Green Hall’? Have you guys not come to your senses yet?”

Jack's mood darkened, "I'll give you ten minutes. Bring me a million dollars. Otherwise, prepare to lie down completely!"

"Kid, are you being serious right now?" The man with the buzz cut gulped. "Do you know how powerful the forces behind Green Hall are? We are backed by Kingston Hall!"

"I don't care, give me the money!" Jack had no fear and asked for the money relentlessly.

Chapter 649

The corners of the mouth of the group of men before Jack began to twitch.

"I… I don't have that money?"

The man with the buzz cut said after a pause, "We don't usually make that much money. We also have to pay Green Hall a monthly protection fee. Whatever we have left, we usually eat and drink it away. Where do you want us to find a million dollars?"

"Eight minutes left!"

Jack was too lazy to be engaged in mindless chatter. He looked at the time and mercilessly pressed on.

"I…"

The man with the buzz cut got really angry. He thought and said to his group of men. "What about you guys? However much money you have, give it to me now. F**k, let's pool it. Looks like we have met our match today. What more, he is not afraid of death and he is so relentless. I don't think we can get away with this."

The men were speechless and helplessly paid up their share to the man with a buzz cut.

Moments after, one of the men looked at the balance in their bank accounts and bitterly said to Jack, “Brother, I’m so impressed. You’re not even afraid of Green Hall?”

“Stop bullshitting. Get us the money! Send it to Tiger!” Jack said curtly.

Tiger was too scared to accept the money. He stepped forward, smiling awkwardly, and said, “Hey big brother, let’s not cause them any more trouble. Let it go now so that we won’t get into any trouble in the future!”

The truth was that Tiger was still afraid. When he heard the gangsters talk about large and powerful forces backing their clan, he was afraid to offend them any further-to offend such strong powers would not bring them any good.

Furthermore, it was only because of Jack’s presence today that they were bowing their heads temporarily. What if they come again in the future? Matters may not be as simple as a scuffle or a fight then. Who knows, they could even murder him and his wife.

“Yeah big brother, please let it go.” Tiger’s wife stepped forward and begged.

“Hey I can’t just let it go. I saw with my own eyes how they were bullying you!”

Jack’s resolve was clear. He looked at Tiger and said, “Don’t worry, it is their responsibility to compensate you. If they mess with you again, I will destroy all of Kingston Hall.”

Tiger heard this and took a deep breath. He thought that Jack was really way above his head right now. Kingston Hall was Eastfield’s top and ultimate Hall. Even the Drake family was afraid of Kingston Hall. Jack was taking Kingston Hall way too lightly, and throwing his words around too casually.

“Kid, really? You’re not scared of Green Hall? Unafraid of Kingston Hall? If you think you’re so capable, why not you pay Green Hall a visit?”

The man with a buzz cut glanced sideways at Tiger. “We don’t have much money today. After half a day’s worth of work, we only have nine hundred fifty thousand dollars with us-it’s all for you!”

“Tiger, give them your account number!”

Jack looked at Tiger and said, “I am in fact visiting Green Hall tomorrow. You’d better prepare the remaining fifty thousand for me tomorrow. I’ll treat that as my fee for today’s work. Even I cannot do this for free!”

“Big brother, it’s only fifty thousand…let it go, they’ve already given us nine hundred and fifty thousand, let’s just cut them some slack!”

Tiger looked like he was in between a rock and a hard place. He started to feel really afraid.

“don’t worry. I’m not just going there for fifty thousand. I am going to settle some other matters!” Jack laughed and patted Tiger’s shoulder.

“Don’t worry, I’ll be sure to warn them tomorrow. If they don’t listen and still stir up trouble with you, they would have a death wish coming for them!”

Chapter 650

“Alright, kid, you’re really something. We’ll give you this nine hundred fifty thousand dollars today!”

The man with the buzz cut really could not believe the blasphemy coming out of Jack’s mouth. He threatened, “We’ll see you at Green Hall tomorrow. If you don’t show up, we’ll know what you’re made

of!”

The man with the buzz cut transferred the money to Tiger. He paused and continued, “If you don’t show up, don’t blame us the Green Hall men for stirring up some trouble with your dear little friend and his wife. I’m telling you, this woman is surely something. Just from patting her earlier, I got a little excited.”

Jack smiled cooly and sharply kicked in between the man’s thighs.

“Ah!”

The man’s voice cracked and kneeled on the floor painfully.

“I let you go this time and you still dare to clamor and hoot? Don’t even think of any women in the future. You think I can’t live up to my word?” Jack could have let bygones be bygones. It was a small matter to get them to compensate the money. What more, he had promised Selena that he would not be stirring up trouble and that he just wanted to live a peaceful life.

He could not have imagined that this rascal would even dare to insult them this way, did he have a death wish? He felt that he could not go soft on them, since the other party still thought that they were pushovers.

“Brother Luca!” His underlings were scared. They did not imagine this kid to be so cruel and kicked Luca’s private part. Brother Luca yelled and passed out. His men picked him up and carried him away.

“Impossible!” the boss of the restaurant next door was also scared. He did not think that Tiger could be connected to such a skilled fighter, what more a skilled fighter that had no fear for the Green Hall or even Kingston Hall!

Most importantly, this man could even beat up Brother Luca to a pulp-was not this asking for it from Green Hall?

“You! Come here…”

He was discovered by Jack. Jack looked at him and gestured for him to come over.

“Bro-brother, are you looking for me?”

The boss looked around him and saw that he was the only man there. He was petrified and did not dare to go over.

He was just an ordinary businessman. He expected Brother Luca to take care of it for a hundred thousand dollars. Seeing as even Brother Luca was beaten to a pulp, how would he dare to go over?

“Not coming? Do you wish to die?” Jack asked casually.

The boss felt his legs going soft and he gulped. He walked toward Jack grudgingly. As he arrived before Jack, his brow was already sweating buckets.

“Hey, handsome man, what do you need from me?”

The boss took out a cigarette and shakily passed it to Jack. His hand was shaking so much that he dropped the cigarette midway.

“I don’t want cigarettes, I’m not interested!” Jack smiled cooly. He said, “Close your restaurant tomorrow onward. Otherwise, you’ll upset me!”

“Okay, okay, okay. I’ll shut down the restaurant tomorrow. It’s my fault for bad business. I admit my fault now!”

The boss nodded. He was just an ordinary businessman and did not want any trouble. He did not dare to open his mouth and protest, in fear of Jack murdering him. After all, this man before him might have some powerful forces behind him too.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 651-655

Chapter 651

Besides, his restaurant made losses every day, and he himself felt that he needed to shut it down soon. So long as Jack did not try to blackmail him of more than ten million dollars, everything would be fine and dandy!

“Alright, then. Just get out of here!”

Jack waved his hand and took out a White-Sand cigarette, lighting it slowly.

“Okay, okay. I’ll scram!”

The boss of the restaurant immediately darted out of the place as if he would die within the next second of remaining there.

“Big Bro, thank you so much. We wouldn’t know what to do if it weren’t for you!”

Tiger looked at Jack after the boss left, his eyes red. “And my wife would probably have been bullied by those vagrants if you hadn’t come over with me.”

Tiger was feeling extremely lucky—lucky that he had thought of Jack and managed to bring him here. Otherwise, he would not have been able to beat those guys.

Furthermore, that man called Brother Luca would probably have taken advantage of his wife.

“Just call me if you need anything!” Jack chuckled.

“Let’s go, Big Bro. Let’s go drink a few rounds!”

Tiger flashed a straightforward smile. “You just made someone give me more than nine hundred thousand dollars this time. I’ve yet to recover from the shock!”

“Don’t sweat it. Just go and open your business in peace. They won’t cause you any more trouble!”

Jack took a drag from his cigarette before he added, “On the contrary, I’m the one who’ll be causing them trouble tomorrow. I need to see if they’ve learned their lesson so I’m not going for a drink. I need to return home. It’s getting late.”

“All right then. Let’s drink sometime soon!” Tiger nodded, seeing Jack off as the latter drove away.

“Tiger, this Big Bro of yours is amazing! He’s not any regular veteran, is he?”

Tiger’s wife could not help but comment after Jack left. “His fighting prowess and aura aren’t like a regular person’s!”

“He saved the Goddess of War’s life before, and he’s pretty good friends with her. He wouldn’t be so fearless before the people from Kingston Hall otherwise!”

Tiger smiled. “I never expected that he would become such a man in five years. I heard that he was promoted to the rank of Head Commander. But to me, he’ll always be better than a God of War!”

“Shh!”

His wife immediately scanned their surroundings, fearful. “Don’t say such things. How can you spew such nonsense? Saying that he’s stronger than a God of War? What if a God of War heard you? They wouldn’t be happy, and they’re so terrifying. People practically worship the ground they stand upon. Your Bro is strong, but he can’t compare to a God of War!”

“All right. I get it. Let’s go. I don’t think we’ll be getting much business tonight. Let’s close up shop and go back home to see Dad and Mom and our son!

“We’ll wait until tomorrow when there aren’t any rascals disturbing us. I believe our business will start to pick up!” Tiger clenched his fist, speaking confidently.

…

Jack quickly drove back to the villa.

After he parked the car, he noticed a Volkswagen parked right beside him.

A small smile lit up Jack’s face as he studied the new car. It seemed that Ben had truly grown up. This was a good thing to him.

However, he also believed that Ben had suffered plenty of emotional trauma. Jack would not forgive what Ivan and Xena had done so easily.

He wanted to let them know that everything they had done today was incredibly and utterly foolish.

Chapter 652

“Daddy, Daddy. Come here. Look at this. See what I’ve got…”

Kylie ran over to Jack as soon as he entered the villa’s living room, squealing with that cute, angelic voice of hers.

Jack’s heart immediately melted at the sound of that voice and at the sight of those doe eyes.

He instantly crouched down to heft Kylie up, planting a kiss on her cheek. “Good job! My little girl’s got a sticker!”

“That’s right. The teacher said I was a good student!”

Kylie’s smile was bright and innocent, happiness laced into its curve.

“Oh? Of course, my daughter would be the smartest, most responsible kid in class!”

Jack carried Kylie up the stairs. “Right. Kylie, would you like a reward? Tell me. I’ll give you one!”

“Okay. Bring me and Mommy to the aquarium on Saturday!” Kylie asked, staring at Jack in anticipation after thinking about it for a moment.

“Sounds good. We’ll bring you there on Saturday!”

Jack only put Kylie down once they were on the upper floor.

He returned to his room. Only then did he notice that Selena had already returned home from work and was taking a shower.

On the bedside table, there was a poster.

Embarrassment clinched Jack when he noticed the poster. This was the advertisement that someone else had helped put up, no? It seemed that Selena already knew about the whole thing.

He sat down for a few minutes. Selena walked out of the bathroom, dressed in casual clothing. A hint of warmth graced her lips when she saw Jack. “You really want to send ripples across the entire city, don’t you now? How much money did you spend to advertise it so extensively? It seems like you wouldn’t have achieved such a result if you didn’t spend at least ten million dollars. Your mom will be worried about your finances. Again.”

Jack grinned in embarrassment. “My dear, I just want your birthday to be known throughout the entire city so that you’ll have some fine memories. However, I didn’t do the advertisements. I don’t like being so showy.”

Selena was surprised when she heard that. “No way. They would’ve had to spend a lot of money. The advertisements are everywhere. So much so that I’m embarrassed to go out. My colleagues are even discussing coming over during my birthday.”

Her brows furrowed after she pondered for a while. “Strange. Who would spend that much money to advertise the both of us if it’s not you? Isn’t this just a waste of money? What benefit would they receive?”

Jack could not help but give a wan smile looking at Selena’s beautifully arched brows. “Think about it, dear. Not many people know about this, and not many were around either when I made the declaration. Who do you think it is?”

Naturally, Selena, being the sharp woman she was, immediately reacted when Jack prompted her. “No way. Xena? But why would she do this? Especially when Ivan had just been sorely beaten up by us. Why would she do this with Ivan?”

“They still think that I’ve been poisoned. The poison is expected to manifest on your birthday, and they want to watch the show. Do you get it?” Jack spoke lightly as he chuckled.

Selena finally understood. “Right. They don’t know that you’ve been cured. Ivan—that son of a b*tch! He really wants everyone to watch you die on my birthday, eh? I never expected him to be so wicked!”

Jack nodded. “It’s good that they helped advertise the event though. We don’t have to do it ourselves anymore. The news will circulate throughout the entire city very quickly.”

Chapter 653

Selena did not know whether to laugh or cry. Ivan and Xena would probably stab themselves in the throat if they knew what Jack was thinking right now. Of course, they probably would not have advertised the event just like that if they had known that Jack cured himself of the poison.

“But this is just my birthday. No need to kick up such a fuss over this. That advertisement probably caused a real shock for everyone, claiming that the bash will be the ultimate talk of the town for years to come. They even made a countdown. My God, we’ll probably be the butt of plenty of jokes if the party is too…normal!” Selena voiced her concerns after she thought about it.

“It’s not just expensive food that will make the event grand.”

Jack wrapped his arms around Selena, giving her a warm smile. “Don’t worry. Just relax. Trust me to handle this!”

“Okay!”

Selena pursed her flushed lips, then spoke bashfully. “Go and take a shower. We’ll go down to eat after that. They’re making the prawn that you like.”

“You really know me well. You already know what I like to eat only after a month of my return!”

Jack studied the beauty before him. He could not help but place a gentle kiss on her lips.

“Daddy kissed Mommy. I’m going to have younger brothers and sisters!”

They were not aware that Kylie had slyly opened the door and poked her head inside the room. She clapped a hand over her mouth and chuckled when she saw this.

“Ah!”

Selena jumped from shock and immediately shoved Jack away, rolling her eyes at him flirtatiously. “Seriously? Why didn’t you close the door?”

Jack gave her a bitter smile. “I never thought that our little girl would come in at this time.”

“Let’s go down, Kylie. Don’t speak such nonsense, too! You’re more than enough for us.”

Selena walked over and carried Kylie, ready to head down with her cheeks colored red.

“You can’t do this, dear. We need another child. Kylie will be lonely otherwise!” Jack quickly reminded her after he realized it. As for Selena, who had already walked to the door, the tips of ears were already flaring pink.

He did not expect her to cast a bashful glance over her shoulder after she stepped out of the room. She gave him a look that was not unlike a teenage girl experiencing her first love. “Fine. If you can cause a stir throughout the city during my birthday and make me feel like I’m the happiest woman in the world,

I'll agree to have another child. But that won't happen if you don't make me feel super, super touched, and happy!"

"I guarantee you'll be satisfied!"

Jack burst into laughter. He knew that Selena was already satisfied with their lives now. She was teasing him on purpose.

After he finished showering and eating, Jack hugged Selena to sleep.

…

At this moment, a group of vagrants arrived before the headquarters of the Green Sky Hall. "Sir, you have to help us! Brother–brother Luca has been beaten up, so badly that his balls have been destroyed and his face rearranged. He's in the hospital now!" a man threw himself at the feet of a middle-aged man, pleading pitifully.

The corners of the middle-aged man's mouth twitched slightly when he heard that. "F*ck. What's with all the commotion today? Spit it out! What happened?"

Chapter 654

The leader of the Green Sky Hall spiraled further into a bad mood.

That afternoon, he found out that Flynn had been hospitalized after being beaten up. One of his legs had been broken so badly, it needed to be amputated.

He was still contemplating what he should do tomorrow—if he should just let the whole incident slide for that bodyguard of the Drake family. He did not expect his subordinates to come crawling to him again.

“Tell me what happened. Why was Luca beaten?” the middle-aged man spoke slowly after having remained silent for a few seconds.

The other man finally narrated everything that had happened. After he finished, he said, “I don’t know if that fellow was making empty threats, but he said he’d bring trouble to the Green Sky Hall tomorrow morning! He wants us to compensate every bit of that fifty thousand dollars!”

“F*ck!”

The middle-aged man was extremely angry. He slammed his hand on the table beside him and with a sharp crack, the table splintered into pieces.

He stood up and spoke furiously, “Does he think that the people of Green Sky Hall are such pushovers? We’ve already given nine hundred and fifty thousand dollars. What more does he want? Jeez. That bodyguard from this morning knows the Goddess of War, and he’s a son-in-law of the second-class aristocrats, the Taylor family. Who’s this b*stard now? Don’t tell me he knows Gods of War too!”

The man kneeling on the floor furrowed his brows. “We’re not sure, but at any rate, he quickly fought us once he came. He probably doesn’t know any Gods of War!”

“Alright. Leave for now. I’d like to see if he comes tomorrow!”

The middle-aged man quickly took a few thousands worth of cash and thrust it to his subordinate. “Buy a few gifts and visit Luca tomorrow. Don’t worry about everything here. We’ll see if that punk shows his face. If he does, I’ll be sure to break both his legs!”

“Yes, sir! Thank you, sir!”

The men nodded and hurriedly left.

After they left, an elder that was sitting to the side finally stood up. “Master, what should we do? Will those two fellows actually show up? I think they probably just made the threat to scare our men.”

The leader of the Green Sky Hall was called Hector Zaborowski. He went silent for a few moments before speaking, “For the fellow who wants fifty thousand dollars, we’ll take his word with a grain of salt. We’ll just kill him if he comes! He was only able to defeat more than a dozen men because Luca and the others were never strong to begin with. With the two of us old pros, we’ll definitely beat him to death!”

Hector paused for a while before continuing with a leisurely tone, “But the man called Jack won’t be as easy to handle, I’m afraid. The Gods of War will probably give us trouble if we off-ed him just like that. On the other hand, the Green Sky Hall would lose its reputation if we just answered to his every beck and call like a lapdog!”

The elder nodded. He thought about it for a while before adding, “Why don’t we do this, Master? We’ll give him a test. It’ll also be a way for us to lose face gracefully. It won’t be embarrassing if word gets out, right? Or we could test his strength. He might serve us some purpose if he’s truly strong!”

Hector’s eyes brightened as he heard the suggestion. He smacked the side of his head. “You’re right! Why didn’t I think of that?” he exclaimed. “I heard that the fellow was a Head Commander. He’s definitely strong. More importantly, he has contacts. It’d be fantastic if he used them for the sake of the Green Sky Hall!”

“By the way, I’ve noticed quite a few leaflets circulating the city today, advertising the birthday party this fellow is going to throw for his wife. He even claims that it’ll cause a stir throughout the entire city.”

The elder quickly thought of something else.

Chapter 655

“Really? He must have spent a lot of money. Does he really have that much money to splash around? Or

perhaps the old master of the Taylor family will be giving him money to celebrate Young Miss Taylor's birthday?"

Hector frowned. "Probably not. He said that it'd be shameful to use the Taylor family's money. Besides, he's just a son-in-law. No one would be so nice to someone like that."

"Mmhmm. Let's just prepare for tomorrow first!"

The elder spoke after a moment of contemplation. "If he comes alone and acts rudely, it's possible for us to kill him off. No one can pinpoint the murder to us if the body disappears. If we say that he never came, the Gods of War wouldn't just destroy the entire gang for his sake."

Hector nodded. "You're right. That man saved the Goddess of War, but he was probably a doctor in the army so it was his duty to save lives. Besides, the Goddess of War boosted his reputation aplenty during Old Man Taylor's birthday party. She doesn't owe him anything anymore. If we do kill him and pretend to not know anything, the most the Goddess of War will probably do is to pretend to interrogate us!"

The next day, a group of people waited in the huge garden right after the Green Sky Hall's entrance. They wanted to see if the bodyguard from the Drake family and the man who bellowed about coming to claim the 50 thousand dollars would actually come.

Jack parked the car at the entrance. He walked straight in when he noticed that there was no one there.

Two muscled bodies immediately blocked him after he took a few steps into the garden.

One of them spoke in a rumbly, intimidating voice, "Are you the son-in-law from the Taylor family?"

Jack nodded. "Get out of my way. I came here to talk with your master. I don't want to waste my time with you!"

“Quite crude, eh?”

The other man clenched his fists. “You can’t just see the master of the Green Sky Hall whenever you like,” he said viciously. “You’ll have to follow our procedures if you want to see him. Defeat the both of us first. Only then, do you have the right to see him!”

Hector and a number of the Green Sky Hall’s men watched the exchange from a distance. Quite a few of them had frosty smiles creeping up their lips. They wanted to see how strong this son-in-law from the Taylor family was.

After all, these two were not just any muscle-bound fighters, but they were two excellent fighters from the Green Sky Hall. Even some Head Commanders could not match up to them. Furthermore, it was two against one.

That was why they thought it would be difficult for Jack to take them on if he did not have the strength of a major, in the least.

Jack flashed a cold smile, not giving a sh*t about them. “What a load of rules and regulations! Since I have to follow them, let’s go!”

After he said that, he gently slapped a hand on the other man’s stomach, the movement a blur.

It looked like a casual slap. Yet, that huge man was flung backward, his limbs flailing. He flew for a few good meters before he finally crashed onto the ground. Blood spurted out of his mouth and his expression was contorted.

“Ah!”

The other man was already throwing a punch at Jack. Jack was fast—terrifyingly fast. However, during the exact moment he attacked the other man, a gigantic fist came straight towards his head.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 656-660

Chapter 656

When he saw his opponent making a move, Jack quickly threw his fist forward. It suddenly collided against the other man's fist.

For a moment, there was only silence that followed a dull thud. Then, that big man flew backward as well, just like his comrade.

He flew quite a few steps back, his feet drawing beneath him a long, thin line on the ground before finally coming to a forceful halt. The big man gurgled and spat, fresh blood dribbling out of the corner of his mouth.

"Amazing!"

Two big men walked over. They clapped their fists into their palms simultaneously after looking at Jack, bowing slightly. Then, they parted to the side.

At this moment, Hector also stood up, clapping his hands while walking forward with the people gathered behind him. "You're pretty good. I never expected that the son-in-law from the Taylor family would be so frighteningly powerful!"

"Master Zaborowski. I heard that your first name is Hector, right?"

Jack laughed and said, "It seems like you had planned to cower me into submission first, eh?"

The corners of Hector's mouth twitched slightly. He stopped a few meters away from Jack. "I was merely being courteous. What do you mean I was trying to cower you into submission? My subordinates have long heard of your fighting prowess, so they wished to test their strength against yours. Now, all of you are comrades forged through the way of the fist!"

Jack laughed aloud again. "What a way to make friends. Thank goodness I'm strong enough. I would've probably been beaten to death if I were a terrible fighter. I have to pay compliments to your way of thinking, though—testing me first to judge the situation. Not bad!"

When they heard this, Hector and the elder beside him exchanged a glance. Both of their expressions had soured. This guy was far cleverer than their expectations, seeing right through their scheme in such a short time.

"No way. You've misunderstood us, kiddo. Our subordinates really just wanted to spar with you!" the old man stood up and told Jack, smiling.

"Really? But they both told me that according to the rules here, I don't have the right to talk to their master unless I defeated them."

Jack sneered inwardly, casting a glance toward the two men from earlier.

"Ahem. We just wanted to spar with you, dear sir. We only said that because we were worried you'd refuse us!" they quickly reacted and explained, chuckling. The two men were not idiots.

"All right. Speak, Mr. Jack. What business do you have with us here today?"

Hector maintained his smile as he looked at Jack, giving off the aura of someone engulfed in a fresh spring breeze.

Jack smiled. It seemed that Hector was a wolf clothed in sheepskin. Although he had a serene, kindly

expression now, he must have stained his hands aplenty behind the scenes.

He spoke immediately, “Of course, I came here for business so I won’t dilly-dally any longer. You all probably know this as well—that I was the one who beat up the person who pretended to be blind yesterday. They secretly took pictures of a lot of ladies! I want to settle this matter today!”

Chapter 657

Hector still plastered a smile on his face when he heard that. “I thought it was something serious. I heard that the memory card had already been destroyed by you. So, isn’t the matter settled already? What more do you want from us?”

He paused for a while here, before continuing with a smile, “I know. You want some money from us to compensate for your losses, right? It’s normal for one to think like that. I completely understand! Tell me, how much do you want?”

Jack replied immediately, “I don’t want money for this issue. My request is simple. Don’t repeat this. Destroy any backups you have. Understand?”

The corners of Hector’s mouth twitched. “Are you threatening me?”

“I won’t investigate any further. I’m sure that you know full well I’m threatening all of you here. If you don’t destroy the backups and continue doing all this in the future, I’ll make sure that the Green Sky Hall would be completely obliterated if I catch wind of it!”

Jack chuckled. He was not frightened in the least, standing there with his shoulders squared and radiating an aura of utter solemnity.

“What a mouth you have on you! I’ll teach you a lesson!”

An old woman stood up. “Care for a round with me?”

Wrinkles were etched all over the old woman’s face, but there was a perceptible sharpness in her eyes. She looked to be in very good spirits.

Jack sensed that this old woman was probably a lot stronger than the two men from earlier.

However, he flashed a wan smile toward the old woman who was leaning against a cane. “No way. You look like you’re seventy or eighty years old. Won’t I be a laughingstock if I hurt you? They’ll say that I bullied a granny.”

“Don’t worry. We definitely won’t say that you bullied her!” one of the men from earlier laughed aloud.

“That’s right. She’s one of our best fighters. No average person can match her strength. You? Bully her? It’d be a miracle if you can last ten hits from her!” another middle-aged woman also laughed from the side. Jack’s words made her feel as though she had just heard the joke of the century,

“Don’t worry, sonny boy. I won’t hold a grudge against you if you do have the strength to beat me to death.”

After the old lady said that, she turned toward Hector who was behind her. “Master Hector, take this as a personal grudge between me and him. It’ll be my bad luck if he kills me. There won’t be any grudges between him and the Green Sky Hall. Is that possible?”

“All right!” Hector agreed with her, nodding after pondering the proposal for a few seconds.

From the looks of it, the old woman was going to fight with a killing intent, which was why she would probably use her full strength for the fight. She would not have told Hector all of that otherwise.

Meanwhile, Hector's goal was the same. If she could not kill Jack because he was too strong for her, he would treat it as a mere spar and a personal grudge. It would not have anything to do with the Green Sky Hall.

However, if Jack was not strong enough and was killed by her, she would probably destroy every bit of evidence that he had been here, leaving no trace for anyone to find him.

"All right. You can fight me with peace of mind now, boy. Let's see if you have the strength to kill this old granny here!"

The old woman clutched onto her cane, the light in her eyes dimming dangerously.

Chapter 658

"I know you want to kill me, but I won't let you!"

Jack flashed a cold smile when he heard that. If this old woman from the Green Sky Hall did not act too brashly, he would not destroy her straight away either.

After all, Kingston Hall was behind the Green Sky Hall.

It was not because Jack was afraid of Kingston Hall. Tanya, Yvonne, and Sharon knew about the incident today. It would create a huge hoo-hah if Kingston Hall was completely destroyed. Many people would probably doubt his identity.

He would not be able to live the peaceful life that he had now.

After all, Kingston Hall was the most powerful underground organization in Eastfield and the strongest among the gangs. They did not fear the presence of the Drake family at all.

“Really? You’re speaking as though you can kill when and wherever you please!”

The old woman felt like she was being belittled. She was just old, but her strength was unmatched by a regular person.

She took one step forward. The cane in her hands suddenly whipped toward Jack in a vicious arc; a frosty, murderous intent filled her eyes.

It looked like a normal ebony cane, but at that moment, it resembled a sharpened sword, slashing forward at a blinding speed. With that sudden thrust, Jack did not have an inkling of doubt that a normal person would already have a hole carved into their chest.

That was because Jack had heard the subtle echo of a supersonic boom from that thrust.

“So fast!”

Jack was shocked. He really did not expect the old woman to be so dexterous. If he had not gone to war, he would have been completely terrified by her.

“Hmph. Scared now, aren’t you? Is your life flashing before your eyes? Don’t underestimate me just because I’m old. Those two huge goons from before can’t match my strength!”

Delight crept over the old woman’s expression when she heard Jack gasp.

The tip of her cane was extremely sharp. Jack did not have the time to dodge.

Yet at this moment, Jack dazzled her eyes. His entire body seemed to meld into the shadows as he sidestepped her attack in a flash. He appeared right beside her.

“No way. You dodged that?”

The old woman took a sharp breath. She was utterly stupefied. She suspected that she must have imagined it.

She knew that Jack was strong after having watched him defeat those two men without breaking a sweat. However, she never expected him to be far stronger than she had imagined.

She seriously suspected that only a King of War could have that kind of speed, based on the fighting strength within the military ranks.

Jack dodged the attack. The old woman’s cane pierced straight into a wooden pillar behind him.

This was a small pavilion that was held up by four wooden pillars.

No one expected that such a huge pillar would have a hole carved straight through it. The cane had struck through the entire pillar.

“That cane is made out of fantastic stuff!”

Jack gave a wan smile when he saw that.

“Ah!”

The old woman was so frustrated that she missed her mark. She felt embarrassed.

She released a huff and jerked her arm. That wooden pillar crumbled, allowing her to loosen her cane from the hole.

The pillar held for three seconds, then it toppled onto the ground in a resounding crash. The entire pavilion went down with it.

At that moment, the old woman attacked Jack again.

However, Jack did not dodge her attack this time. Instead, he grabbed the cane with a quick sweep of his arm, and a powerful force rippled along the length of the cane.

The old woman did not reveal a sliver of panic when Jack caught her cane. She still believed that Jack was not as strong as her.

Chapter 659

Nonetheless, she never thought that the force from that causal sweep of Jack's arm could be so deadly and powerful that it ruptured the end of the cane she was holding. The incredible force streaked through her hand, causing it to tremble uncontrollably as she struggled to hold the cane.

"Ah!"

The old woman stumbled back a few steps and her right hand was trembling unruly. She gazed at Jack with her eyes full of terror and respect at the same time.

Jack's strength was impressive and his speed was as fast as lightning. She even sensed that Jack was having fun with her and that he must not have shown his true strength—the powerful strength that was hidden perfectly.

"Hmmm? What now? Giving up?" Jack flashed her a small smile and said in an indifferent voice.

“Jesus Christ! Isn’t this kiddo too powerful? He’s even able to take away Elder Castellano’s cane!” a spectator from the crowd could not hold back a loud gasp. The battle between Jack and Elder Castellano was truly eye-opening.

“No way! Don’t tell me Elder Castellano can’t defeat this retired soldier?”

Some of them had their foreheads pressed together as they expressed their doubts.

After all, they had never seen Elder Castellano defeated in a fight before.

The corners of the old woman’s mouth twitched involuntarily. At the same time, she was hesitant to admit defeat. If she surrendered now, she would surely become a laughingstock in front of the Green Sky Hall. If she tried again—harder and fiercer—there might be hope for her to win.

“Kiddo, it’s either you or me in the coffin today!”

With her teeth gritted tightly, the old woman charged toward Jack again at lighting speed, switching positions several times in the hopes of trying to confuse and get close to Jack.

“Your cane’s in my hand. I must say, you’re quite bold to come at me without any weapon!”

Jack sneered frostily. With the cane in his hand, he swung it at his opponent before she could even come near him as though he was using the cane to beat a dog. The cane hit the old woman’s arms and thighs several times in a row.

“Ouch! Ow!” The old woman jumped from the pain as if she were a monkey in the circus. Her body curled slightly.

“You win! You win!”

Finally, she yelled her defeat. Every movement sent ripples of pain through the old woman’s arms and legs.

Jack stopped at last. The old granny scanned her body and there were many fresh and insidious bruises caused by the strokes of the cane. Although Jack did not use too much force, and all the injuries were merely bruises on the surface, the pain was searing and indescribable.

“Now, do you think I’m able to kill you?” Jack stared at the old woman without any remorse but a faint yet callous smile on his face.

The old woman felt even more embarrassed. For the first time in her life, she felt that she had been beaten until she could not even counterattack. She lifted her head, staring straight into Jack’s eyes, her voice cold, “Give me back my cane! I know I’m not your opponent at all. Kiddo, you’re young yet powerful!”

“I don’t think it has anything to do with age!” Jack chortled as he threw the cane away casually. It landed right in front of the other party.

“Ahem! Mr. Jack, a moment ago you mentioned that as long as we deleted all the backups and we ceased this business immediately, you’d leave us alone?”

Hector, blending in with the other spectators on the side, was stunned by Jack’s strength. Jack’s combat prowess was truly astounding! Now, Hector had no other choice, but to put on the warmest smile on his face so that he could look amiable in front of Jack.

“Yup, that’s right!” Jack bobbed his head.

“Alright! I admire you a lot. It’s a deal then!”

Hector immediately agreed to his demand. There was no other way after all. Besides, he did not want to make a big fuss about it. Although there was Kingston Hall behind them, if Jack was truly pissed off, it was highly possible that today would be their last day on the earth.

Moreover, Jack was not just a 'good' fighter, but the finest and the greatest. Even if Kingston Hall knew about the episode, they would not dare to provoke him, too, given that his fighting prowess was that outstanding. Even if Kingston Hall were to win in a fight with Jack, the losses would be acute and unbearable.

"Hmmm. Well. That's all, then!"

Jack smiled lightly and then continued, "Now, let's talk about another thing!"

Chapter 660

Hector had assumed that it would be enough if he agreed to Jack's demand and that the other man would think about leaving them alone.

He truly never expected Jack to bring up another issue.

Jack observed the people around him and noticed that the men that had followed Brother Luca from yesterday were not around. He surmised that they had gone to the hospital to see their injured comrade.

"What's wrong? Don't tell me that you want money, after all?" Hector spoke with a cold smile.

"I really am going to ask for money!"

Jack chuckled. "Your men owe me fifty thousand dollars. They couldn't even cough up a million yesterday. How shameful!"

“You beat up Brother Luca, too?”

Hector’s expression darkened. He nearly fainted from anger. He had been thinking that he was truly unlucky today, to have met such a tough, fearless warrior. He planned to properly torture the fellow who had bullied Luca, ensuring his death.

He never thought that Jack was the same man who Brother Luca and the others had provoked. When it rained, it truly poured. They provoked the same fellow on both occasions.

“That’s right. Isn’t it a coincidence?”

Jack flashed a cold smile. “Not only do you have to give me fifty thousand dollars, but you’ll also have to order your subordinates to not give my brother any trouble. I won’t settle for cash otherwise!”

“Aren’t you pushing it, Jack?”

Hector flashed a bitter smile. “You wanted a million dollars, so my subordinates scrounged everything they had in their pockets to pay you nine hundred and fifty thousand dollars. Do you really have to ask for the remaining fifty thousand?”

Jack’s expression was nonchalant. “What a stupid question. Just pay the amount that we agreed upon.”

“Fine. I’ll just take this as a stroke of misfortune!”

Hector’s expression hardened and he was displeased, but he nodded at the middle-aged woman beside him anyway.

The woman walked towards Jack and took out her phone. “Give me your bank account number. I’ll transfer the money immediately.”

“Now we’re talking!”

Jack did not hesitate to give his account number to her.

What he did not expect was immediately receiving a notification from the bank after he gave his account number.

“So fast?” Jack frowned and looked at her.

“I haven’t even keyed in the amount yet!”

The woman stared at him, perplexed.

Jack opened the message and was taken aback. After he read it, he realized that it was a bank transfer of more than 170 billion dollars.

“Oh, it was from someone else!”

Jack flashed a pained smile, finally responding. He had asked Skyler to help get rid of the Xenos family in Sky City and to sell off the assets and shares that they had. They donated some of the profit and divided the rest between themselves, 50-50.

He never thought that there would be so much money left even after dividing the portion.

“Oh!”

The middle-aged woman furrowed her brow, suspicion twinging in her. It could not be a coincidence, right? Unless this guy was merely playing dumb?

However, it had nothing to do with her. She keyed in the PIN and quickly transferred 50 thousand dollars to Jack’s account.

At this moment, Jack’s phone rang.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 661-665

Chapter 661

Jack switched his focus to his phone. ‘Skyler Celestino’ appeared on the screen.

“Hey, Skyler Celestino!” Jack uttered casually after picking up the call.

“yeah! According to the ratio you told me, you’ll be getting a hundred and seventy billion dollars for your part. You should’ve received it by now, right? What a steal. Not only did I fix my itch to fight, but I also made a big profit out of it.” Skyler’s manly voice rang from the phone.

“Yup, I got the money. I’ve got some errands to run, so I’ll hang up now!” Jack ended the call in the next second.

The woman before him was standing nearby, and Skyler’s voice was not particularly soft on the other end of the call as well. Jack was not sure if the other party had heard any part of the conversation.

At this time, Hector approached the two and uttered, “Jack, I heard that you’re a bodyguard of the Drake family, right?”

Jack had already outstretched his leg and was about to leave the place. He did not expect such a question to pop out of Hector's mouth. He nodded in conformity with the question, "Yes, what's the matter?"

"I heard that they pay you twenty million dollars a month. I find that you're a gifted talent, after watching you and my men trying out each other. I really admire you for your skills!" Hector answered with a gentle smile.

"That's right! Master Hector is right! Jack, we've heard your big name a long time ago. Your talent will be gone into the drain if you continue to stay with the Drake family," the elder—who was standing next to Hector—leaned forward and echoed.

"I'd pay you a hundred million a month, how about that? Work with me and help me expand Sky Green Hall. I truly believe that if we work together, it'd be impossible for the Sky Green Hall not to grow in the future!"

Hector stretched out his finger, gesturing the number 'one'. His expression turned solemn and firm.

"A hundred million dollars. It's indeed quite a lot!"

Jack's pallor remained calm and plain. "However, I don't want to work with snobs like you. Forget it! Just coming to this place has wasted a lot of my precious time. I need to go to the Drakes to work now!"

In the next second, Jack strode toward the gate without turning his head once.

Hector's right index finger was still mid-air. He stayed frozen as though the conversation was a deadly lightning bolt that struck his brain. Many have said that if one person was offered double of what he was earning, that person would take it without thinking twice. He, himself, had offered Jack five times his previous salary, and yet this punk did not even blink an eye and walked away.

Moreover, the look in his eyes and the tone of his voice were filled with disdain and contempt, as if 100 million dollars was nothing but stacks of waste paper in his eyes.

“What the f*ck? Is this brat an idiot? He turned down a hundred million a month? I swear that there’s no salary higher than this in Eastfield!”

A guy could not help but sigh at the scene before him. If he were offered such a salary, even if it were not 100 million per month but per year, he would be smiling all year long, even when he was sleeping.

“Yeah! What an idiot! He must be an idiot!” another guy chimed in, laughing aloud. “A hundred million a month, and he just walked away? Instead, he went to work for a job of twenty million a month. What’s wrong with this brat?”

“Perhaps this punk’s drooling over Miss Tanya or Miss Yvonne. After all, the only thing this guy doesn’t lack is money. Since he’s not short of money, he’s probably after the two beauties! That must be the case!”

Another man was hypothesizing the situation. He narrowed his eyes and scratched his chin.

The middle-aged woman from before gazed at Hector before slowly opening her mouth, “Master Hector, when Jack answered his phone a while ago, I think I heard something!”

“Oh? Really? You were standing very close to him just now, what did you hear?”

Hector was no fool. He believed in his subordinates. If his people took the initiative to come forward to report something, that something must be valuable and worth taking note of.

“The person who called Jack, I think his name is Skyler Celestino. I vaguely heard the other party

mentioning that a hundred seventy billion dollars was transferred to Jack's account. He asked Jack if he had received it," the middle-aged woman said hesitantly, her face scrunched up.

Chapter 662

"Skyler Celestino?"

"One hundred and seventy-eight billion dollars?"

The crowd present at the scene was completely dumbfounded. Terror streaked through the space. These two pieces of information were overly shocking.

"Are you sure you heard it right? Skyler Celestino? Doesn't this name belong to Skyler, the King of War? That's the eight-star King of War!"

The elder was paralyzed to the spot, the terrifying surprise holding him in a tightening grip. He only managed to regain his words after a few minutes.

"There's only one King of War with the name Skyler Celestino!"

The middle-aged woman had a blank look in her eyes as though she was dwelling in a haze of confusion, yet to recover from the news.

"If it really was Skyler Celestino, the King of War, why did he give Jack so much money? More than a hundred seventy billion dollars! Are you sure you heard the number correctly? Why did he give that b*stard so much money?"

The sudden shock caused Hector's muscles to tense up. Only prominent families could produce that amount of money after they had sold all their properties.

Nobody at the scene could understand why a King of War—an eight-star King of War—would give so much money to an adopted son-in-law.

The elder suddenly thought of something and immediately rushed into the house. He took a poster and ran out again. He breathed out heavily, “Master Hector, look! Look at the poster! That guy promised to make his wife’s birthday the grandest event that would shake the entirety of Eastfield. Could he have borrowed money from the King of War so that he could host the greatest birthday party for his wife?”

Thoughts were running wild inside the elder’s brain. This was the only possibility that he could think of. Other than this, no other suppositions could explain this situation anymore.

Nonetheless, after hearing the words that he had spewed, he started to doubt his own assumption. If that was really the case, 170 billion dollars was too much, was it not?

“Hmmm, spending a hundred million is enough to hold the grandest birthday party in Eastfield, right? A hundred and seventy billion dollars, how’s that possible? Besides, a King of War wouldn’t have lent out such a huge amount of money, right? And I truly doubt that a King of War who had just returned from the army would be able to fork out that much money in the first place, right?”

After giving some thought to the shocking news, Hector finally said to the middle-aged woman, “Hawa, you must’ve heard it wrong. Yup. You heard it wrongly.”

“Did I? But I thought that’s what the other person on the phone said!”

“Oh! Now I see it!”

Suddenly, the elder clapped his hands together after realizing something. “Damn! I think we’ve been fooled by him!”

“Huh? What do you mean?”

Everyone at the scene turned their attention towards the elder, scratching their heads, not knowing why.

“That fool must’ve made someone else make that call on purpose and pretended that Skyler Celestino was the caller! All the contents in that call must’ve been staged and rehearsed!”

The elder’s mood lifted and his eyes were full of wisdom. “He did it because he was afraid of offending the great power behind us—the Kingston Hall. This shows that he’s afraid of Kingston Hall and that he doesn’t want to create trouble. Therefore, he pretends to be close with Skyler Celestino, the King of War. However, the biggest mistake that he made was the amount of money. That sum of money is so unrealistic that it exposed his sneaky plan!”

Chapter 663

“That mother*cker is really f*cking smart! We were almost fooled by him!” one of the injured bulky men slapped his thigh and shouted.

“This man is more cunning than a fox!” a middle-aged man chimed in, wearing a bitter smile. He then continued, “He’s afraid that we might continue looking for trouble and just let him off temporarily. That’s why he kept this wild card in his hand, so he could leave the place. Otherwise, how could the call be so coincidental? How could the call come in right as we were about to transfer the money to him?”

After hearing everyone’s detailed analysis, Hector bobbed in agreement. That b*stard had almost deceived him!

He turned his gaze to the elder and said, “Elder Ward, I’m thankful for your wit and wisdom. Fortunately, he revealed himself by saying some ridiculous amount of money—a hundred seventy billion. If he had said a hundred or two hundred million, we would’ve fallen for his trap.”

The sound of praise entered the elder’s ears and lifted his mood. With his hands behind his back, he slowly said, “I can only comment that this fool has over bragged. His plan would’ve been perfect if the sum of money was lesser. He would’ve scared the wits out of us! But, the more he tried to scare us away,

the more mistakes he made. It has become crystal clear that he's actually afraid of us in his heart." With a prideful tone in his voice, he continued, "He didn't come here today to stir up trouble. If he really wanted to, he wouldn't have been merciful to Elder Castellano and the two during the fight!"

"Yes, you're right! This guy is as sly as a fox! Such a delicate plan!"

The old granny—Elder Castellano—nodded in agreement. "I only suffered surface injuries on my body. This guy can control his strength and power very well. It seems that he truly is afraid. He must've come today due to yesterday's episode—he was showing off in front of Miss Tanya and Miss Yvonne, pretending to be all tough and powerful. Hence, he mustered up the courage today to come to warn us just to complete his bragging show. Secondly, he's afraid that our men would continue to find trouble with his brother—Tiger!"

"Yep!" Hector nodded to agree. "Anyway, judging from his combat prowess, I guess I'm not on par with him. Plus, he's clever and witty. He's definitely not someone we should provoke. Let's try not to offend him!"

"But…"

Elder Ward's forehead creased, and after a moment of silence, he enunciated, "Master Hector, some of the photos that we took are for several domestic websites, and some are for the overseas markets, which are our primary market as well. If we were to follow what the brat had asked of us, we'll make a lot less profit and the other parties may not agree to it!"

"Yes. The loss will indeed be quite huge. I estimate at least a hundred million dollars would be lost in a month!"

Hector clenched his fists firmly at the thought. "Dammit! This is a low-cost but high-yield business! Now, it's all ruined by the b*stard Jack. If we stopped it, the losses would be huge!"

"That's right! If the parties who work with us in the overseas market don't agree with it, I'm afraid that

they might create trouble for us. Besides, we're not known by the authority and power behind them. It would be fortunate for us if they let us compensate for their losses!"

Elder Ward's face morphed into one of solemn soreness. "We can stop causing trouble for Jack's brother. As for the matter of not taking pictures, it'll be a great loss for us!"

Hector flashed them a wan smile, his teeth gritted tightly. "But you saw it yourself, too. He is too powerful for us to offend. None of our men can kill him! We'll call it luck that he decided to spare our lives. Even I, myself, am not his opponent, and I don't think those skilled fighters from Kingston Hall are at the same level as him! Our best bet is to do as we were told!"

Hector shut his mouth for a moment and then continued, "I'm the master of the Green Sky Hall. I can't go back on my own words! If word gets out that I'm an untrustworthy person, where should I hide then?"

The elder heaved a deep sigh. "This problem, hard to solve. What if you tried talking to someone from Kingston Hall?"

Hector presented the elder with a dry smile in return. "That's a no-no! My elder brother doesn't like me being involved in this business. I do it behind his back. So, you tell me, how can I talk to him about this?"

He remained silent for a while after he spoke, and then he uttered again, "We will trade the photos that we took this month. After all, tomorrow's the trading day. We'll do the trading privately and Jack won't know of it. As for next month, let's think about that next time!"

Chapter 664

Meanwhile, at the Drake's residence…

Three beauties were casually strolling in the ample garden of the Drake's residence.

Yvonne gazed at Tanya, wanting to ask something but she was afraid that her concern for Jack would be too obvious. She feared that the two beauties before her would misunderstand her.

Nevertheless, worries and concerns for Jack had been growing uncontrollably within her all day.

She knew in her heart that the head of Green Sky Hall and the head of Kingston Hall were biological brothers. The reason why Green Sky Hall managed to develop and expand so well and so fast was because of the power behind them—the Kingston Hall.

Moreover, there were several top-notch fighters in Green Sky Hall, whom even Spectre from the Drake's family would think twice before picking a fight with them.

Therefore, dread and worry gnawed at her insides—she truly worried about Jack's safety.

Jack should have come to work by now, yet he had not presented himself. Hemust have gone to do what he had declared he would do.

Tanya could not help but keep her eyes on the entrance gate, her face plastered with disturbance.

"Jack, why hasn't he come to work yet?"

Sharon George, who was still chit-chatting about another topic, could no longer suppress the uneasiness within her and blurted, "He must've gone to the Green Sky Hall! I don't know if he can solve this matter!"

"I think not!"

Since Sharon had already mentioned Jack, Yvonne continued smoothly, "The men in Green Sky Hall are not easy to deal with. They have a lot of good fighters that can't be easily handled. They're beyond

ordinary good fighters. Besides, Hector's a smiling tiger—outwardly kind and benevolent, but inwardly cruel and wicked. Jack's a simple-headed person. He's too straightforward and wouldn't know when to retreat and give face to the other party. I'm really afraid that…"

Tanya bobbed her head to show agreement. "The most crucial thing now is that Jack has gone to the place. He's not going to let them continue taking such photos. I know Jack, he'd want to solve this problem now and forever, but he's practically chopping off the other party's financial resources." Tanya paused for a second and then continued, "Yesterday, I asked Pa about Green Sky Hall, and he told me that the people in there aren't only trading their photos to domestic websites, they're also trading with some powerful authorities overseas!"

When Sharon registered these analyses into her brain, she grew even more anxious. "You're right! Cutting off people's source of money is like killing their entire family! Not to mention, this is their long-existed business! Now that it's been called off by Jack, how could the other party accept it? Green Sky Hall is one son of a b*tch! How could they trade with overseas authorities! This is frustrating!"

Tanya flashed a bitter smile. "Before, I didn't know that the Green Sky Hall would do such a thing underground. My Pa and the others only found out about it not long ago, too. There's simply no way to stop them. If Kingston Hall weren't behind Green Sky Hall, we, the Drake family, would've taken action! But with Kingston Hall behind everything, my Pa feels helpless, too!"

"No, no way! Jack's in danger now! I…I have to go and save him!"

Sharon stomped anxiously. "I'll bring some bodyguards as well as several top-notch fighters from the George family! I must help him! He can't die!"

"But, Sharon, Jack said he could solve it alone!"

Yvonne pulled Sharon back and added, "If you go there like this, aren't you afraid that Jack might be unhappy?"

“But—but, it’s better than leaving him to die there, right? I’m really worried about him!”

Sharon was so frantic with fear, her face went white.

“Don’t worry. I believe in him!”

Tanya gained a little more confidence in Jack when she thought of the episode that happened outside the city—Jack attended to the challenge in the woods and beheaded hundreds of men, some of whom were very powerful.

Just as her last syllable dropped, a scarlet red Porsche 911 drifted into the gate and swiftly parked in a parking space not far away.

“He’s back!”

At the sight of this, the corners of Tanya’s mouth curled upward, and she was relieved.

Chapter 665

“Finally!” Sharon and Yvonne exclaimed in unison, both heaving big sighs of relief.

Sharon gazed at Yvonne, her rosy pink lips slightly parted. She could no longer hold back and asked, “Yvonne, you seem…you seem to be very very worried about him, too. Don’t tell me you like him, too?”

Sharon’s question startled Yvonne, causing her to choke. Her eyes flickered and her cheeks were immediately kissed pink. She retorted instantly, “What? Impossible! That guy’s a pervert who drools over beautiful ladies! I don’t like him at all, hmph!”

Lines appeared on Sharon’s forehead as her brows furrowed. “Impossible! If he’s a pervert, then why

didn’t he drool over me? I’ve got a great figure and I look good, too!”

“Hello, beauties! Looks like nothing’s bothering you and you’re in a good mood, admiring the beauty of flowers,” Jack teased as he walked over to the three of them, a gentle and warm smile on his face.

When Jack appeared in front of them, Sharon—whose brain was seized by worries and panic just a few seconds ago—instantly calmed down and her demeanor changed. She became somewhat reserved and shy, putting on a casual face devoid of any worry for Jack at all.

“Green Sky Hall, did you really go there?” Tanya, on the other hand, asked aloud.

Jack nodded in response. “I’ve got the fifty thousand dollars! I’ll treat you ladies to lunch today!”

“Wait! What? What fifty thousand dollars?” Tanya questioned, looking puzzled. “Didn’t you say you were going to talk to them about the photos? What’s this fifty thousand you’re talking about? Don’t tell me that you let them off the hook for a mere fifty thousand dollars?”

“What? No way! I thought you’d at least fight them!”

Yvonne was as dumbfounded as Tanya. Why did Jack go to Green Sky Hall to make a fuss for fifty thousand dollars? Even if his purpose was to blackmail them, 50 thousand dollars was too little, no?

“Oh, I almost forgot something! You don’t know what happened after I got off work yesterday. My closest buddy, Tiger, came to me and told me that his restaurant….”

Remembering that the three had no knowledge about yesterday’s episode, he patiently narrated the incident from stem to stern.

Jack shrugged once he finished telling the story. “Therefore, not only did I settle yesterday’s issue, but I

also collected what Green Sky Hall owed me yesterday—the fifty thousand dollars!”

“In that case, the people in Green Sky Hall are truly sly foxes! First, they tested your strength, and if you weren’t strong enough, they would’ve ended you on the spot!”

“Little did they know that you’re not just powerful, but their secret weapons—the skilled Granny and two big men—aren’t worthy opponents as well. Only when they knew they couldn’t beat you did they surrender, just so their problem wouldn’t become worse!”

Cold sweat dripped down Yvonne’s forehead as she repeated the episode. Fortunately, Jack was a strong combatant. His experience as a soldier in the past five years had not been in vain. Otherwise, he would have been in a dangerous situation today!

“They’re not that smart. Such dirty tricks can’t escape me!”

Jack chuckled nonchalantly, and then continued, “But I have to say that Hector’s nothing but a smiling tiger. He looks benevolent and kind on the outside, but inwardly, he’s full of dirty, cunning tricks. It’s not a surprise that such a person can become the Master of Green Sky Hall!”

“What I’m worried about now is whether the other party will go back on their word. They only agreed to your demand on the surface because you’re strong and hard to get rid of!”

Tanya frowned deeply after thinking about it. “His elder brother is the Master of Kingston Hall! What if he tells his brother about this? We’re done for!”No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 666-670

Chapter 666

Jack arched his brow upon hearing Tanya’s concern. “I don’t think that’d be the case. Hector’s the head of Green Sky Hall, after all. As the head of an infamous house, how can he just go back on what he’s promised?”

Tanya, on the other hand, could not hold back from shooting Jack a sarcastic glance with her pair of big beautiful eyes. “Indeed, he’s the head of the Green Sky Hall, but their real power is not what you see on the surface. To the world, they’re all about opening spa and wellness centers, but under the surface, they make a lot of deals with dirty trades. Should we really trust such a person?”

Jack bobbed his head in agreement at Tanya’s words. “Let’s see how it goes, then. If he doesn’t learn his lesson, he’ll regret it later!”

“Alright, then. It’s pretty late now, let’s go shopping!” Tanya suggested tentatively.

Jack looked at the watch on his wrist—it was almost noon. After some contemplation, he proposed, “Okay! I have fifty thousand dollars from the Green Sky Hall. Let me treat the three of you to a nice lunch!”

“Thank you!” Tanya chortled. “Oh, right! I almost forgot! It’s payday and it’s your first time receiving your pay. The financial department will transfer your salary to you no later than this afternoon!”

Jack looked unconcerned by Tanya’s utterance. “Really? If you hadn’t said anything, I would’ve almost forgotten all about it.”

“What? It’s a salary of twenty million dollars a month! I bet this figure is the highest in the bodyguard market! How could you not look forward to it nor show any excitement at all? Worse, you almost forgot about it!”

Yvonne was tongue-tied. Even if Jack had a few million in his hand, a salary of 20 million would still be considered a huge sum of money! Yet, not even the slightest hint of excitement could be seen on his face.

It seemed that money was irrelevant to him.

“This hopeless brat. How could you forget about twenty million dollars!”

Tanya did not know whether to cry or to laugh at Jack. “Had I known you’d forget your own payday, I wouldn’t have been in such a hurry to pay you. It’s great if I could save a lot of money!”

In return, Jack flashed her the warmest smile and said, “If you don’t pay me, won’t you be afraid that one day I’d remember my salary of twenty million and spank you for not paying me?”

Jack finished his sentence with another hearty laugh before noticing that Tanya’s face had turned as red as a tomato. He then realized that he seemed to have said something wrong. Tanya was a lady, after all. Perhaps his joke was a little bit too much.

Besides, he often made fun of his apprentices this way when he was on the battlefield. Everyone in the camp was used to it, but now they were not in the camp, and Tanya was no apprentice. She was the daughter of the Drake family—the family’s most precious pearl!

Tanya’s face turned scarlet as she shot a glare towards Jack. “Hmph! You…if you dare to do so, I’ll never pay you your salary!”

“Cough, cough! Ahem! It’s just a joke. Alright, let’s go…go out to eat!”

Jack coughed awkwardly, clearly embarrassed. He then walked to his car in a serious manner in an attempt to cover up his embarrassment.

Sharon felt uneasy and uncomfortable hearing the conversation that took place between Jack and Tanya. She curled her lips, pouted, and muttered, “This idiot didn’t even look me in the eyes, and now he wants to spank Miss Tanya!”

When Tanya heard what Sharon said, she went silent. She instantly took Sharon's hand and said, "Sharon, don't tell me you're jealous? He was just joking around. How could he like a little girl like me? Besides, he has a wife!"

Nonetheless, Sharon did not look satisfied with the explanation. She mumbled with a tone of disappointment, "I'm still upset! Why can't he joke around like that with me!"

Chapter 667

Yvonne was at loss for words. She sauntered behind Sharon and landed a soundly slap on her butt, then walked away as though nothing happened.

"Ah!"

A dull ache settled into Sharon's back, causing her to yell out loud. Her eyes widened into spheres as large as saucers. "Yvonne Drake, what are you doing!"

A heartless smile plastered Yvonne's face as she wheeled her head around. "Didn't you just say you wanted to be spanked? Just pretend that slap was from Jack."

Sharon was dumbfounded. She did not know whether to cry or to laugh. She huffed angrily, "How—how can that be the same?" If the slap was truly from Jack, it might have implied that Jack had some interest in her. In that case, even if she were to be spanked black and blue, her heart would be bursting with joy. However, she had to be realistic. Jack, this idiot, had never given her a chance. She had no idea what to do next.

"Let's move. It's the first time Jack's treating you to lunch, so chop chop!"

Sharon's affection and loyalty toward Jack triggered a sigh out of Tanya. She never thought that love could be like this. Sharon's love was an obsession. It possessed her and made her lose her sense of self.

However, the current situation was of unrequited love.

After all, with Sharon's attractive look and alluring figure, a lot of men out there would be head over heels for her!

With such charismatic attributes, Sharon still remained loyal to Jack and continued to actively pursue him. Nevertheless, Jack did not bother to reciprocate those feelings and never gave her a chance at all!

At the entrance of the villa, a faint yet cordial smile was hanging on James Drake's face. He was observing the commotion, standing not too far away from the four of them.

"Jack White, he's indeed not an ordinary man. I must give him credit for having the courage to go to Green Sky hall alone!" James whispered to himself, his tone full of mixed emotions. By this time, Jack and the others had disappeared from his sight.

"Indeed, not an ordinary man. Miss Tanya said that Jack was going to pay them a visit, but I didn't expect him to come back so quickly. It seems that everything went well!"

Spectre nodded in agreement. "For a detailed understanding of the whole situation, we'll need to spend some money to get the information."

James put on another warm smile in response. "Nah, I think Tanya and the others are pretty close to him. They were chatting for quite a while just now. They should be discussing the events that happened in Green Sky Hall. We could just ask Tanya when she returns later tonight. She should know quite a lot!"

Spectre chortled. "Miss Tanya's something else. She's managed to get close to Jack in such a short time. Young Master Drake, on the other hand, is still the same—stoic and full of disdain toward Jack. He doesn't look like he's a fan of Jack, and he never really talks to Jack that much."

Thinking of this son of his, James's facial expression hardened. "Timothy, this brat. Always making me

worry for him! I heard he's been playing billiards with Grayson from the Mont family whenever he's free as of late. Furthermore, their betting amount in a single game is quite huge. You could lose a lot in just one game!"

Spectre's forehead creased into a frown. Looking at James, he slowly spilled out some words, "Master Drake, there's one thing about Young Master Drake that I'm not sure if I should report."

Looking at Spectre's hesitant expression, James's heart suddenly felt uneasy. He permitted, with his brows furrowed, "Spill it!"

"I've heard that Young Master Drake has been visiting some entertainment centers lately and that he's been mingling with a friend of Michael Wilson. That friend is a young master from a third-class family, and he's got a stinky reputation."

James's face turned even darker upon hearing the news. "Timothy, this fool! He's always been obedient and performs pretty well in front of me. I didn't expect he'd start mingling with these people. If he continues to behave in such a way, how am I supposed to hand over the Drake properties to him in the future!"

Chapter 668

In a flash, Jack and the three beauties had arrived at a hushed and serene restaurant with classy decoration.

It was a decent restaurant. The environment was quiet and had pastel aesthetics. Although the price was mildly exorbitant, money to Jack was never a problem. The price did not sway Jack in the slightest.

"Alright, ladies. Order whatever you want! It's my honor to invite three beauties to lunch for the first time!"

Jack handed over the menu and enunciated modestly. "I'm only a bodyguard, and three of you are from noble families. Yet, you're willing to let me treat you to lunch. It's truly an honor!"

Tanya was speechless for a while. This jerk was no ordinary man, and he must be a man of a higher social status than she was. Yet, he was acting all stupid in front of her.

It was evident to everyone that this guy was not an ordinary bodyguard.

“The prices aren’t cheap at all. Aren’t you worried that fifty thousand dollars won’t be enough?” Yvonne purposely teased Jack after taking a look at the menu.

“Don’t worry. Do you think my budget for our lunch is only fifty thousand? It’s my pleasure to have you three beauties together with me. I’d be more than happy to spend five hundred thousand on you, let alone fifty thousand!”

Jack giggled, then he gazed over his watch and pondered for a second before saying, “Oh! By the way, Selena’s company is just nearby, and it’s almost lunchtime now. I’ve invited her over for lunch with us since she has a two-hour lunch break!”

“Wouldn’t your dear wife be jealous of us? That you’re having lunch with three beauties? Moreover, you’re spending so much on us, wouldn’t she scold you?” Tanya teased playfully.

“Nah, she won’t!” Jack uttered confidently. “My wife is a gentle, kind-hearted, generous, intelligent, and virtuous woman. Why would she scold me just because I invited three of you to lunch?”

Hearing him compliment Selena and looking at the prideful expression on Jack’s face, Sharon’s heart sank and her thoughts started to get clouded. She could see that Jack really did love his wife. There was a huge difference between how he treated Selena and herself.

All this made her feel doubtful of herself. Was she not charming or good-looking enough? She wondered if Jack would ever fall in love with her.

Jack went out to call Selena. At the same time, Yvonne was ordering some food.

“F*ck off!”

A piercing voice echoed from inside the restaurant into Jack’s ears when he was just about to make the call.

Jack’s brows immediately furrowed after hearing the voice. He looked into the restaurant and in the next second, his face scrunched up.

Inside the restaurant, several men with gold necklaces around their thick necks surrounded Tanya and the others. One of them wore a cunning lopsided grin. He stretched out his arm, wanting to caress Tanya’s cheek.

“Tsk, tsk, you’re one hot chick, aren’t you? You have silky smooth skin, too. How about my bros and I treat you to this lunch and after that, you come with us for a karaoke session and have fun with us!” the rascal spoke, his mouth twisted into a perverted grin. He switched his focus over to Yvonne and Sharon who were beside her. His Adam’s apple moved up and down vigorously. “These two chicks, too! Look at their bodies…so well maintained…and their faces…so gorgeous!”

“Yeah, you’re so right! Miss, the one thing we don’t lack is money. We’ll treat you to good food and good wine. Come and have fun with us! Eighty thousand or even a hundred thousand is not a problem for us!” another man echoed while giggling.

Just as Jack stepped out of the restaurant to make a phone call, these rascals entered. They noticed the three beauties as soon as they entered the restaurant and they could not help but approach them in an instant.

There were a lot of nice-looking women on this earth, most of whom were gold-diggers. They all adored sugar daddies and enjoyed being their sugar babies. As long as the men flashed out some cash and showed off their money, most women would bow down before them!

Of course, these few thugs had experiences with such women before, so naturally, they possessed some level of confidence when they approached Tanya and the others.

“Just order whatever you fancy, my lovely ladies. Even those super fancy and exorbitant food and drinks, too. We have money!”

Chapter 669

Once the thug who had his eyes fixated on Tanya finished his speech, he stretched forth his hand again, trying to stroke her cheek.

“F*ck off!” Tanya slapped his hand away, with a look full of disgust plastered on her face.

This was the piercing voice that Jack heard a while ago. He entered the restaurant, his face icy-cold.

“You’re some hot-tempered chick, aren’t you? How dare you hit me! Do you know how much you need to compensate for slapping my hand? I was going to ask nicely if you’d agree to hang out with us, but since you hit me, you have no choice but to come with us today. Oh well. Of course, you can choose between hanging out with us or paying me one million dollars for the medical expenses!”

The man sneered. Since Tanya had hit his hand, he decided to threaten her.

“One million dollars is like a peanut to me, it means nothing! But for some jerk like you, dream on!”

Tanya shot up from her seat and leaped forward slightly, trying to push the thug away.

“F*cking b*tch! I’m trying to play nice with you, but you don’t seem to appreciate it, huh?”

This man was not easy-going as well. He pushed her back, hard.

“Ah!”

The man had obviously trained before, his physical strength was not a joke. How could a young miss from a wealthy family like Tanya be able to take in such a push?

Tanya stumbled, losing her balance before she slipped and fell backward.

As she was falling, she felt so frightened! She was wearing a short skirt today and her clothes were white! The words ‘embarrassment’ and ‘shame’ flashed in her mind.

A strong arm appeared from behind her and wrapped around her waist. The owner of the arm caught her in time, and Tanya hung diagonally in his grip, mid-air.

The moment Tanya was caught mid-fall, she struggled to release herself from his grip. However, when she noticed that it was Jack who caught her, she heaved a deep sigh of relief.

Was this not a scene similar to the ones in soap operas?

Before this, she had always found shows like that too ridiculous and silly. How could the male lead always appear on time during critical moments? The male lead would wrap his arm around the waist of the female lead before exchanging glances affectionately.

But as she found herself caught in this exact scene, Tanya was frozen, as still as a statue. She could scarcely believe the scene before her eyes. Her heart hammered in her chest and almost leaped out of her throat. Suddenly, she was reminded of the night when Jack accidentally kissed her lips twice. Her rosy cheeks turn redder.

However, there was a difference between soap operas and the reality she was living in—Jack did not even look at her, much less in an affectionate way. After catching her from the fall, he immediately helped her up.

“Miss Tanya, are you alright? Did he scare you? I’m truly sorry. I just wanted to make a call. I didn’t expect the arrival of several wolves!” Jack spoke with a warm smile on his face as he helped Tanya up.

“Wow! Isn’t somebody trying to play superhero?”

The thug who shoved Tanya had a wolf head tattooed on his chest. He ripped his shirt open a little bit wider to show off the tattoo before saying aggressively, “You’re right about me being a wolf! I’m not just a wolf, but a wild one who has tasted blood before! Did you know that?”

“Look at this!”

The other three thugs glanced at each other before they, too, pulled their shirts open to reveal the same wolf-head tattoo on their chests.

“It’s just a tattoo. How’s that frightening?”

Jack let out a frosty laugh after taking a look at their chests as if he was watching a clown show.

Chapter 670

The four rascals in front of Jack thought that he would be scared of them after revealing their tattoos. However, not only did Jack show no sign of fear, he even said some things that made the corners of their mouths twitch. Did this punk not recognize the tattoo?

“Aren’t you afraid? The streets around this area are our territories! We’re from the Wolf Fang Gang!

The man pointed to the tattoo on his chest and announced proudly, “Although we don’t have a lot of members in the Wolf Fang Gang, each gang member is as ruthless as wild wolves! Offending us is equivalent to digging your own grave!”

Another one chimed in, “If you understand the situation, you’d make yourself disappear! Besides, this chick provoked Brother Felix. If not, Brother Felix wouldn’t have shoved her!”

“I understand. Hmmm. Then, do you know who I am? Also, do you know who this lady is? Are you guys dumb or what? How dare you push this young miss!” Jack chuckled and responded nonchalantly.

“Do I look like I care? All I know is that she’s an attractive woman.”

Brother Felix laughed uncontrollably. Obviously, he did not recognize Tanya and the others.

However, the blame was not on them. After all, they were just some local rascals that were not even qualified to meet or be associated with someone like Tanya who was from a noble family. Those who would be aware of Tanya’s status usually came from powerful noble families.

“I’m her bodyguard, and she’s Miss Tanya from the Drake family!” Jack’s face sank.

“What? No way! She’s Miss Tanya? From the Drake family?”

One of the thugs was stunned at Jack’s words. He was clearly frightened. If it was really Miss Tanya from the Drake family, then they were in big trouble!

Another thug immediately retorted, “F*cking fake! Miss Tanya is a Drake! With her status and identity, she shouldn’t come to a place like this. Besides, if Miss Tanya’s out in public, shouldn’t there be a group of bodyguards with her?”

Felix thought the statement was reasonable as well. He commented, “You sure do know how to brag, huh! If Miss Tanya from the Drake family has come out, there would be at least a dozen bodyguards with her! They’d be brawny and strong, but here you are, just a single fellow. Look at yourself, you’re neither bulky nor strong! Do you think we’re fools?”

“I’ve ordered mine, do the rest of you have anything else to add on?” Yvonne asked as she turned to Jack and the others after placing her order. There was not a single trace of worry or concern on her face.

“I’m good. We could always order more food later if it’s not enough!”

Jack smiled as he rubbed his fists. “Explaining things to trash like you is wasting a lot of my time and energy. I think my fists can do the explaining better!”

“Do you think I’ll be scared?” Felix laughed aloud and waved his hand, signaling the other three thugs to attack Jack.

Nevertheless, with a few simple strokes and punches, the wolves plopped onto the ground, clutching at their chests in pain before they started to cry. Pain seethed through them with a terrible intensity. It felt like being eaten from the inside out by a sharp-toothed creature.

“What the f*ck!”

Felix’s eyes widened into spheres as large as kiwis. His throat tightened and cold sweat streamed down his forehead.

He clenched his jaw, took out a pocket knife from his trouser pocket, and launched the blade in Jack’s direction.

However, he did not even get close before Jack snatched the knife away from him.

With his right hand, Jack dangled the pocket knife in front of Felix's face. Felix was so frightened that his body went numb, his blood frozen in his veins. He was unable to move at all.

Felix looked down at himself, only to realize that while there were no injuries on his body, his shirt had been ripped and cut, leaving hundreds of holes. He stood frozen in his spot, looking like a peasant begging on the streets.

"Si—sir, I was wrong!"

Felix's legs turned to jelly in a flash and he plopped onto the ground, kneeling before Jack. He truly believed that if Jack wanted to kill him a moment ago, he would have died more than a hundred times!No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 671-675

Chapter 671

"Boss, we… We're sorry, we made a mistake. We'll get out of your hair and let you be with this chick, alright?" Another man feebly knelt before Jack once he got over the initial sting of pain.

Frowning, Jack coldly snapped, "What are you talking about? I'm Miss Tanya's bodyguard! How dare you!"

"Y—Yes, of course…! This honorable and pretty lady must be Miss Tanya. You're such a powerful bodyguard. Now I see why she needed only one bodyguard with her all this time… You're basically a one -man army, with the power of a hundred men!" spoke the man as he quivered, and he wiped the cold sweat off of his forehead from time to time.

If the beautiful woman they intended to take advantage of was indeed the Drake family's Miss Tanya, members of the Wolf Fang Gang would not even mutter a word if they were killed right here. The Drake family was the most prominent family; small groups like them were not qualified to even fight back.

“Boss, please let us go,” Felix begged Jack. “Can we show ourselves out?”

Jack glanced at them indifferently. “I’d watch yourselves if I were you. You people might lose your lives the next time I see you doing this again!”

“Yes, Big Brother,” Felix nodded thankfully. “We’re truly grateful for this mercy you’ve shown us!” Felix lowered his head as he began to walk away with his men. He wanted nothing more than to dissolve from this place.

However… “Wait!” Jack called out to him just as he took two steps away.

“What?!” The four of them glanced at each other, their faces slowly losing color. They never thought Jack would go back on his word. Was he going to kill them?

“I didn’t allow you guys to leave, did I? You guys said that you’d treat Miss Tanya to a meal, didn’t you? Could it be that you’re backing down on your promise?” Jack smirked. Meanwhile, Tanya had already returned to her seat as the blush on her face had receded. Still, she felt jittery when she recalled the feeling of Jack’s arm wrapped around her waist.

It was not long after Jack thought to himself that he ordered, “Go pay the bill. Then, kneel here and wait until we finish our dinner before you can leave. I’ll let you guys go after that.”

“Oh, of course, of course! We’ll pay the bill right now!” Fearing for their lives, the men nodded vehemently before they scurried to pay the 60,000 worth of bill.

Once they paid, the four The four rushed toward Jack’s table and knelt right beside them. They were so ashamed that they lowered their heads bitterly, and it showed on their faces too.

At this moment, Selena finally came from her company that was located nearby to where they were.

Selena frowned when they saw the four men kneeling on the floor. “Jack, what’s going on? Did you get into another fight?”

Selena was startled to see four men on the floor, kneeling. She had told Jack many times before to stop getting into fights so they could enjoy a low profile lifestyle. The last thing she expected during this meal was this scene.

“These people left their eyeballs at home and dared lust over Miss Tanya’s beauty. This punishment is nothing, really.” Jack smiled indifferently and pulled out the chair beside them. “Honey, take a seat. The dishes will be served soon. Let’s sit and wait for our dishes.”

“Oh, so that’s what happened? I suppose they’re rather foolish if they don’t know who Miss Tanya is!” Selena smiled impassively once she heard Jack’s explanation. Jack was Miss Tanya’s bodyguard, so it was only his duty to do something if she was harassed.

The four men raised their heads and glanced at Selena. They were once again stunned because of her beauty, and they became green with envy. He was just a bodyguard but had such a beautiful wife.

Chapter 672

“Selena, you’re so pretty! This professional suit looks so classy on you!” Sharon looked at Selena and enviously added, “It’s no wonder that Jack loves you so much. I adore him so badly, but he’s cold and indifferent toward me!”

An awkward smile appeared on Selena’s face. “Sharon, Jack isn’t as good as how you’ve imagined him to be. He has a rather cold face sometimes, and he does things too earnestly. Apart from that, he’s not a romantic person and can be rather violent. He likes to settle everything with his fists. You like him so much because you don’t know him all too well just yet.”

Of course, Selena said all these things to Sharon so she could give up.

Although Sharon was a nice and rather wealthy person, Jack was her man. As his wife, how could Selena not have any selfish motives?

Apart from that, she felt that she should get Sharon to give up if Jack was uninterested in her.

“Really?” came Sharon’s reply, her smile still on her face as she did. “I feel that everything he does is great. It’s natural for him to settle matters with his fists if he’s being bullied. If not, what kind of man will he be? Apart from that, he’s a retired veteran who was once in the forces. It’s normal for such a person to constantly have a serious expression on his face. It gives his people a sense of reliability.”

Sharon paused here before secretly glancing at Jack. “More importantly, he gives everyone around him a sense of security.”

“Honey, let me help you with the prawns!” Jack, on the other hand, acted as though he did not hear what Sharon said and, instead, helped his wife to de-shell the prawns.

Sharon was unhappy with this and prodded, “Jack, answer me honestly: Will you consider me if you’re not married and have yet to meet your wife?”

Felix and the others were utterly stupefied when they heard this. What was happening?

Was he not a bodyguard? How could a mere bodyguard be an object of adoration by some? It seemed that this pretty lady was a rich person from another family, yet she liked a bodyguard?

They were practically swimming in envy. Had they been able to have one of these four beautiful ladies, they would not even bat an eye if their lifespan was reduced by a year.

There were actually four women fighting over this guy.

Above all, this guy seemed downright apathetic toward this girl called Sharon. Goddess… He refused such a good chance.

Jack de-shelled some prawns and placed them in Selena's bowl before looking at Sharon. "Miss Sharon, my wife sacrificed a lot and endured a lot of grievance for me. I came back to have a good life with her. I love her and our daughter. With that being said, I can only appreciate your kindness, but I can't accept them."

"I mean, if… What if she's not here? Will you love me?" Sharon was slightly anxious. Jack was really getting on her nerves as he refused to give her a little bit of hope.

"How would there be so many possibilities in this world? There are no such possibilities!" dismissed Jack with a tight smile. "Come on, let's eat!"

The four kneeling by the side glanced at each other and were once again surprised. Sharon George? Was that not the name of the elder miss from the first-class aristocratic George family?

The George family only had one daughter, and whoever it was that married her could inherit the entire George family's properties.

Yet, even with all that, the bodyguard in front of them refused in a high-profile way and without any hesitation. Was this person dumb? For a bodyguard like Jack, it was like getting a free lunch for him to woo for Miss Sharon's love.

"Alright." Sharon was disgruntled at the turn of events. However, when she thought about it… Was this not proof of a good man? At the very least, Jack—who had such temperament—was more worthy of her love.

Chapter 673

“Come, let’s drink some wine!” said Tanya with a smile on her face as she raised her glass of wine. “After all, the people from the so-called Wild Wolf Gang are paying for this entire table. It’ll be a waste if we don’t finish the wine we ordered, and we’ve ordered quite a few bottles!”

“Alright,” chorused Yvonne as she raised her own glass, “come on!” Yvonne grinned.

All five of them started drinking.

Though still bitter about Jack, Sharon spoke, “Jack, it’s alright that you don’t like me, but I have to tell you this: If ever the day comes that you regret your words, come find me. I’m willing to be your second wife and be by your side everyday. I won’t cause you any trouble, and I’ll even get along with Selena!”

Jack cleared his throat at Sharon’s bold proclamation. “Ahem! Sharon, you’re still young, and life’s still long. You’ll meet someone who you’ll genuinely like in the future, I’m sure of it,” he spoke before he sipped his wine.

“Still young? Still young?! I’m not young anymore. I’m at the legal age to get married several months ago!” Sharon pursed her delicate mouth. “You’re just six or seven years older than me.”

All of a sudden… “Felix, what are you guys doing, kneeling here?” A group of seven to eight men walked up to them as they were halfway through their meal.

One of them had a head full of bleached-white hair. The men were extremely surprised when they saw Felix and the others on the floor.

Meeting the eyes of these men, Felix and his gang were speechless and ashamed.

One of the men kneeling blinked at Whitey, the man with bleached-white hair. “Don’t get involved, you guys!” he spoke in a half-shouting voice. He signaled the other person to leave; they could not afford to offend the people here.

However, Whitey did not register the signs in time. “What the f*ck. Had they lost a fight?” Whitey then looked at the four pretty ladies sitting at the table and smirked.

“I get it. You must’ve fallen for one of these women here, haven’t you, Felix? You pervert. how can I not understand you? You can’t control yourself whenever you meet pretty ladies. How can you bear it when you meet such extreme beauty?”

He paused for a brief moment before he badgered on, “Don’t be afraid, don’t be afraid. I’m here. Your brother Anguis is here! We have a big group of people! Let us help you get even!”

“That’s right, Felix. You guys are so terrible! How could you guys lose against one guy? You guys are even kneeling…! This is so embarrassing!” Another guy smiled coldly, not once paying attention to Jack who was at the same table, eating with the ladies.

Felix initially wanted to remind them that they should mind their manners before him and the ladies.

Thus, it came as a surprise to him that they continuously disrespected him. He decided to pretend that he did not see or hear anything and kept quiet all the while.

“Since you can’t get this woman, let me try instead!” Whitey smirked. He abruptly slapped the table and sneered, “Young man, don’t act all innocent and pretend that you didn’t hear us. I’m also from the Wolf Fang Group! You hurt and humiliate my brothers, and now, I’m going to avenge them…! If you understand what’s happening, scram and leave these women here.”

Glaring at Whitey with fierceness, Jack picked up a chopstick and stabbed the man’s hand that was on the table!

Whitey had no time to respond to such a quick move. “Aah!” The next thing he knew, a wooden chopstick was stabbed into his hand. He was in so much pain that he instantly fell to his knees.

Chapter 674

“Aah!” Whitey roared in pain. The veins on his forehead bulged out while the color of his face was drained.

“Hit him!” came Whitey’s thunderous order to his subordinates, all while he gritted his teeth.

“Brother Anguis, this…” His subordinates were downright frightened as they were met with Jack’s icy glare. Judging from Jack’s all-too-quick attack, he was no simpleton. Although they had the numbers, they might not be able to fight him.

“Get out. Don’t destroy my mood,” growled Jack as he noted that more people were surrounding them, and many of the new customers were glancing at them.

Felix immediately looked at Jack in anticipation when he heard this. “B—Boss, how about us? Can we go now?”

“Scram! Every one of you can get lost! Looking at you guys gives me a headache!” Jack looked at him impatiently and waved his hand.

“Okay! I’ll show myself out now!” Felix was all too happy when he heard this as he immediately nodded and stood up with his subordinates.

“Are you guys dumb? Why are you still standing there? Follow us out right now! This is Miss Tanya from the Drake family, and that’s Miss Sharon from the George family!” Felix glanced at the people who were still rooted where they stood.

He then looked at Anguis, who was in extreme pain. “Anguis, you’re too dumb. I was already kneeling there, and you dared cause trouble to Miss Tanya and the others. Are you on a suicide mission?”

“W—Why do you say that?!” Anguis almost fainted in sheer anger. “Why… Why didn’t you tell me this earlier?”

“I’ve given you all the signs, but you’re too dumb to understand it!” Felix immediately walked outside in huge strodes after he spoke.

The others, especially those who came with Whitey, immediately felt a sense of relief after they heard this. They thanked their lucky stars that they did not act upon order immediately. Otherwise, they might share the same fate as Whitey.

Whitey dared not linger any longer and ran faster than a rabbit. A group of almost 20 people vanished from Jack and the others’ sight.

With an indifferent smile, Jack turned to Selena and beamed, “Let’s continue our meal!”

“Okay!” Selena nodded in satisfaction. At that moment, she felt that what Sharon said about Jack—that a strong sense of security could be felt when she was around him—was very true.

Chapter 675

Selena returned to her office for work after she finished her meal. Meanwhile, Jack and the others took a walk around that area before returning to the Drake family’s mansion.

Jack rested in the room the Drake family arranged for him upon their return. He was ready to drive home at around five or six o’clock in the afternoon.

Meanwhile, in the Clark family’s mansion…

Flynn was extremely happy when he saw his cousin, Ken, entering the room. He immediately asked,

“How did it go, Ken? Is Jack dead? What’s the situation of his body? Didn’t you say that he already drank the poison? I remember you guys have gone to Sky City to search for the strong martial artists of the Xenos family too, right?”

Flynn believed Jack was physically weakening day by day, since it had been two to three days since he consumed the poison.

Under such circumstances, Jack would definitely die if his cousin and Young Master Hugo invited the strong martial artists from the Xenos family over to avenge Quil.

His cousin and Young Master Hugo left yesterday and had just returned. Flynn was curious about Jack’s fate.

Ken looked at Flynn with an expression riddled with many emotions at once.

Flynn was his cousin who lost a leg because he offended Tanya while he was enjoying a trip here with Ken. Ken wondered about how he was going to tell Flynn’s parents about this.

Apart from that, the Bane family in the Lone City was slightly stronger than their Clark family, a second-class aristocratic family.

Flynn understood right away when he saw Ken’s darkening expression. Sitting on the sofa, the smile on Flynn’s face instantly vanished. “Is he still alive? It seems like you guys haven’t made a move yet. Every day is a difficult day for me right now… I want to see this bodyguard named Jack die soon!”

He gritted his teeth and looked at Ken with a cold expression on his face. “You’re irritatingly useless, Ken! You can’t even handle a bodyguard!”

Ken was speechless as he meekly sat next to Flynn. “Don’t be so impatient, Flynn. Why do you want to rush it so badly when this guy is going to die anyway? Yes, I went to the Sky City with Young Master

Hugo, but the young master of the Xenos family was a troublesome person. He offended a King of War from Eastfield, and this King of War was so angry that he went to Sky City and wiped out the entire Xenos family!"

Ken paused here and smiled bitterly. "F*ck. This King of War—by some divine intervention—helped that useless Jack. He's just too lucky. He would've been dead by now had he not received such help!"

"Damn!" Flynn balled his hands into fists as he was overwhelmed with disappointment. He had lost one leg and might have to spend the rest of his life in a wheelchair.

He was unwilling to accept this fate as not only would he have a terrible life, but he would be made fun of by others too. Jack was the object of hatred whenever he thought of his possible fate, and a gloomy fate at that.

"There are only twenty-five days left. When it's Selena's time to celebrate her birthday, his time will be up. Don't worry; the poison is very powerful. You don't need to worry about a thing!" Ken comforted Flynn, though a sigh escaped his lips. "It's a shame that Xena and Ivan's private meetings have been exposed. Now, Jack and Ben know about them, and Xena can't continue hiding and spying on Jack. We'd still be able to get news about how Jack is; had she not been discovered. At the very least, we'd get updates on his health and know if it's deteriorating."

"That's achievable!" Flynn laughed a sinister laugh. "Wait several days and employ several good fighters to test Jack. If his body is really in a terrible state and his combat abilities are gone, we can even use this opportunity to kill him before he succumbs to the poison!"

Ken nodded in glee. "This idea of yours is a good idea!" He then took out a flyer from his pocket and added, "Still, I really want to see Jack struggling to even walk and his body decaying till he dies at Selena's birthday. Wouldn't that be a better way to vent out our anger? The most important point is that he and the entire Taylor family will lose face if this guy failed to organize a city-stirring birthday party for Selena!"

Initially frowning, Flynn took the flyer and nodded. "This sounds right. Why end him so quickly if we can let him die uncomfortably and let him lose face? Let's not kill him first. We can order fighters to beat

him up good and assess his physical strength. It's fine as long as they don't kill him!"No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 676-680

Chapter 676

Ken nodded, satisfied with Flynn's idea. "What an idea! This is a great idea! For now, we can beat him up and torture him however we like, so long as we don't kill him. We'll wait until Selena's birthday, when he loses face, before letting him die painfully."

"My thoughts exactly!" came Flynn's reply, his eyes filled with malice and contempt. "I heard that his wife's quite a catch." Flynn gritted his teeth. "Hmph! Once he's out of the picture, I'll have his wife kneel at my feet one way or another, and I'll have her begging for me to toy with her…! I'll have fun torturing her by all means!"

Hearing this, Ken instantly snapped, "Cousin, I'm afraid that's a no-go. I've had my eyes on Selena all this while, so you can't touch her!"

This, of course, did not sit well with Flynn. "Ken, I only want revenge, and you can't even fulfill this request of mine? I… I lost my leg…! I can't vent my hatred if I don't do that!"

Ken's face darkened. "Flynn, need I remind you that it was Jack who broke your leg. You wanted to get revenge and I'm helping you, and your vengeance will be exacted when Jack's dead! What does this have to do with Selena? If you want revenge, punish Jack, not Selena. It's highly likely that she'd be your cousin's sister-in-law in the future!"

He never expected Flynn would burst out laughing. "Sister-in-law? Are you daydreaming? You've known Selena for so many years but you failed to get her, even when Jack was in the army. What does this tell you? This woman doesn't have you in her heart. If she likes you, you would've gotten her without any problems!"

Flynn paused here before he added, "I think Selena wouldn't want to have anything to do with you, even

if Jack's dead. She doesn't like you at all! What if it's just you infatuated here?"

Ken was, of course, pissed at this notion. "You should know that although she didn't express any feelings toward me at that time, she'd occasionally come to meals if I asked her out. I feel that our relationships shouldn't be just as good friends. Do you understand?"

Flynn was not letting it up as he countered, "If that's the case, then tell me why you failed to get her before?"

An expression of understanding appeared on Ken's face, as though understanding Selena's every thought and motive. "It must be because Jack was still alive, so she didn't make a clear statement or give me any chances at that moment. That was why she made no advancements toward me. After all, Kylie is Jack's daughter, and it's natural for her to wish for Jack's return for her daughter's sake. This shows what a good woman she is…! She's a dedicated woman!"

Ken picked up the teacup and took a sip before he added, "Apart from that, she wouldn't have other choices if Jack's dead. She'd choose a reliable and loving man among her pursuers. She'd choose a man with whom she can entrust her life. I am this man!"

"You're really confident!" Flynn laughed and continued, "Just wait and see. It wouldn't be you, even if Jack's gone. It doesn't matter how much effort you've placed into her; she would've given you a chance if she likes you! Oh, and didn't you ask me why I want to torture her? That's because she's Jack's wife. Even if Jack's dead, I want him to die in regret!"

"I don't care. You can't touch her even if Jack's dead." Ken glared at Flynn, his tone much darker than usual. "I know I'll win her heart and her hand!"

"Fine. I'll give you one year after Jack's death. If you can't get Selena's love and get her to be your woman willingly within that period, don't blame me for getting involved then," came Flynn's cold challenge after he mulled over his thoughts.

Ken thought about it and nodded. “Alright. If I still fail to pursue this woman a year after Jack’s death, you can do anything you want, and I won’t care about her then!”

As a thought occurred to him, Flynn then spoke, “By the way, when you send someone to beat Jack up, remember to ask them to take photos and send it to me so I’ll have something to laugh over.”

“Don’t worry, that’s not an issue!” Ken nodded at Flynn as they reached an agreement.

Chapter 677

Jack was back in his villa, and he took a bath and changed. It was only then when Selena came back from work.

“How was work, Honey? Is everything in the company alright?” Jack asked caringly when he saw his wife entering the room.

“Yes, everything’s fine. Though… As bad as he may be, Ivan has been anxiously trying to show off his performance. All the materials in this project are able to reach in time, and their quality is quite good too. The general manager is extremely satisfied with him.” Placing her bag down, Selena searched for a fresh pair of clothes as she prepared to take a bath.

“Really? Oh, Mother said that Grandfather asked us to come over for dinner tonight, so go on and take a quick shower,” spoke Jack with a small smile on his face. “After dinner, we’ll stroll around the compound.”

“Really? Grandfather asks us to come and have dinner with him? Did something happen?” Selena was slightly surprised. After all, this was the first time Grandfather asked them over for dinner since they were chased out of the Taylor family.

Jack thought about it for a while before he replied, “Well, I’m not sure if anything happened, but Mother was the one who told me about the invite. Judging his temperament, he wouldn’t have asked us to come if nothing happened.”

A small frown appeared on Selena's face as she racked her brain for a possibility, but after failing to come up with one, she went to bathe instead.

Once she was done, the entire family walked over to the Taylor family mansion that was just opposite theirs.

When they previously visited the Taylor family, the workers here—including the bodyguards—would not give Selena and her family a good greeting. This time, everyone greeted them curtly and kindly, and it gave Selena mixed feelings at the great change. It was true that one could observe another person's heart more clearly when he had no money or have failed greatly.

"Jack, say less if you can when we're having dinner, alright?" Fiona came to urge him. "Although the Old Master had accepted that you're the Taylor family's son-in-law, you're still an outsider. It might be hard for the Old Master to accept you wholeheartedly in such a short time. I'm afraid that you'll say something wrong and offend the Old Master."

Jack nodded. "Alright, Mother-in-law, I understand. I'll lower my head and focus on eating later. I won't speak, alright?"

Fiona rolled her eyes at Jack. "It's best if you understand. I'm afraid that you'll only cause trouble. If it wasn't because of you, we wouldn't have offended the Xenos family back then!"

It was only after she said it that Fiona soon remembered something. "Now that I've mentioned it, something seems off. We've killed the Xenos family's young master, and I heard that the Xenos family is quite strong in Sky City," said Fiona. "Why didn't they come for us?"

Chapter 678

Hearing what Fiona had said, Joan's lips curled into a frown. "Yes, and I'm quite worried. Selena's mother told me that Quil Xenos asked a marshal to come over. Although this other person's not so capable, it only shows that the Xenos family is really powerful as they had gotten a marshal's help!"

Fiona grew more afraid the more she thought about it. “It’s all because of Jack, and it’s infuriating.” She glared at Jack. “How could he offend someone like that and make people hate him!”

When she saw where this was going, Selena quickly jumped in on Jack’s defense. “Mother, we can’t blame this on Jack,” she reasoned. “Jack told me that they were at the veteran’s gathering and the Goddess of War, Lana killed Magnus Sutherland because he forced female celebrities to sleep with him. This Magnus is Quil’s father’s god-brother, and he has to address Magnus as ‘uncle’!”

Selena paused before she added, “Nobody knew that Quil would instead pick a fight with Jack when he knew he couldn’t do so with the Goddess of War!”

“Don’t worry, Mother. Members of the Xenos family didn’t know that I did it, considering no one was left alive once I was through with them. Nobody would know if you don’t tell others about this.”

Although Jack knew clearly that the Xenos family no longer bore a threat to them, he had to pretend he knew nothing. “Even if they come and investigate the matter, they wouldn’t dare do anything to me if they know that I know the Goddess of War personally and have saved her, too. There’s nothing for you guys to worry about, really.”

“What do you mean, ‘as long as you don’t tell others about this’? Am I the kind of person who rambles about everything to others? Your mother-in-law’s lips are always sealed!” Fiona stared at Jack angrily.

As she walked a few steps closer to him, she spoke, “Even if the other party knew that you did it, they might not attack you. Of course, the Goddess of War doesn’t owe us favors anymore. She can’t help you for the rest of your life because of one favor, right? She’s the Goddess of War! Though, it wasn’t bad that she willingly came to the Old Master’s birthday party last time!”

Fiona then recalled something rather crucial, and it showed on her face as she slapped her thigh. “No, that’s not right… I almost forgot something. Wasn’t Xena there too? Will she tell others about this?”

Andrew was just as frightened when he heard this. “That’s really troubling. I used to feel that Xena was quite nice, but we now know she’s the complete opposite. She’s with Ivan now too, and he’s a person who bears grudges. Let’s not forget that Jack did injure him before, so if Xena tells this to Ivan, the consequences are unimaginable.”

Joan’s face increasingly darkened as she anxiously blurted, “Why did you offend such a powerful family? If Ivan knows and tells this to the Xenos family, we’d be in trouble!”

Quickly coming up with a plan, she then said, “Jack, doesn’t Xena like money very much? She’s a gold-digger, no? How about this: Don’t you still have several tens of millions? Sometime later, ask her out and ask her to keep this a secret. We can give her some money as long as she doesn’t tell this to anybody. I know she’d keep that promise the moment she sees some cash.”

“This is a good idea. What Jack’s mother said is correct. I think that spending money to prevent trouble might work.” Andrew immediately nodded as a sign of agreement.

“I don’t think that’s a good idea.” Fiona was rather reluctant with the idea. “Jack doesn’t have much money with him now; he’s got only several tens of millions. Xena is such a bad woman. How can we give her money when she’s caused my son so much heartache until now?!”

“You…! You’re really…!” Andrew was infuriated with Fiona, and this was the first time he had been this angry. “Do you understand what ‘spending money to avoid trouble’ means? Jack’s your son-in-law! What should we do when the Xenos family doesn’t come after us but kills Jack?

“By that time, Selena would lose her husband! Not only does Jack have quite the money to support her, but he treats our family members so nicely too. Isn’t it hard to find such a kind son-in-law wherever you look? How can such a small amount of money be more important than your son-in-law?!”

Chapter 679

“Mother, I can understand that you consider money to be a very great thing,” began Selena. “And yes, you suffered a lot several years ago. Still, you can’t risk our lives, including Jack’s. What if the martial artists from the Xenos family truly come for us and kill us? Are you really not afraid of death?” Selena

felt herself getting heated at the moment. She felt that her mother was too much; that she could not even discern right from wrong.

Nobody expected, however, that Jack would side with Fiona as he spoke, “What Mother said seems to make sense. We can’t give money to Xena.”

Initially criticized and rebuked for her thoughts and opinions, Fiona lowered her head in embarrassment and dared not speak when no one sided with her. She never expected Jack would take her side on this matter.

Her lips instantly curled into a smile as she proudly remarked, “Look, I’m not the only one who said this. Jack’s saying the same thing, too. We can’t give Xena money!”

Selena was puzzled. She looked at Jack and had no idea why Jack would say something like this. “But why? You genuinely don’t look like a person who worships money. I know you dislike Xena a great deal, but isn’t it a good idea to give her some money so that she’d shut up?”

“This has nothing to do with whether I hate her or not,” came Jack’s cool-headed reply. “Xena is too greedy. The situation of our family isn’t bad right now, right? Yet she still chose Ivan. How much do you think we should give her? Half a million? Five million?” Jack smiled coldly before continuing, “I can bet she won’t be satisfied, even if we gave her fifty million. She might only agree if I give all my money to her! She might even want my future salaries, and I can only keep her mouth shut if I give her money whenever I get my salary.”

“Yes, whatever Jack says makes sense,” came Fiona’s enthusiastic reply, the energy of her nodding in agreement matched with her grin. “This is exactly what I meant. This Xena has a big appetite, and she’s not easily satisfied. What if she still tells the Xenos family after we gave her money? That’s not definite!”

Selena eventually sighed. “That’s true, too.”

Suddenly… “Hey! You people really think you’re that important?!” yelled Cecilia as she stormed from

afar. “The Old Master has been waiting for you guys, and for quite some time, too! Why don’t you guys go in? What are you guys still chit-chatting about here? What’s there to talk about? We’re treating you guys to a meal, and you guys are acting important?”

“What are you talking about, Cecilia?” snapped Selena as she rolled her eyes at her. She was in a bad mood; even a well-tempered person had her limits, too.

Chapter 680

Cecilia was startled to hear Selena snapping at her in such a tone.

The initial stunned expression on her face eventually disappeared as Cecilia composed herself, folding her arms across her chest in arrogance just like before. “It seems the way you speak has changed now that you have quite the money, no? No wonder you look down on me. Isn’t it only a villa that’s worth tens of millions?”

Though there was a strange undertone to it, Cecilia did not stop there as she continued, “I heard that a commander’s reward is around two hundred million, yet you get such a small amount of money after five years. You even went through uncountable life and death situations, but the amount of money you get isn’t much. You bought a villa and several cars, and didn’t I hear that you’ve even hired bodyguards? With my calculation, Jack doesn’t have much money left, right? He only has several tens of millions, no?”

Indifferent, Selena icily replied, “Yes, we don’t have much money, but we aren’t short of money right now either. We’re satisfied that we have a house, cars, and several tens of millions. Although we can’t compete with other wealthy people, I’m satisfied, and that’s enough!”

At this moment, Selena glanced at Cecilia and smugly added, “Our situation is better than some woman who’s not only not married at an old age, but she also doesn’t even have a job and is constantly asking for money from her family.”

This infuriated Cecilia. “You…”

“That’s right! How dare you say that our family doesn’t have any money? My daughter’s salary is a million every month, and she’ll even get bonuses at the end of the year. Although my son-in-law is only a bodyguard, his salary is much higher than hers at twenty million per month. How about you? You stay at home every day. Does this make you rich?”

Fiona could not stand how arrogant Cecilia was. She remembered how Cecilia always mocked them when they were chased out of the Taylor family previously and had no money. They, unfortunately, had no way of avoiding such a fate so they could only endure it.

“Hmph! No matter what, your son-in-law is a bodyguard. He’s only a bodyguard, and he’s working for somebody else. What’s there to brag about?” Cecilia scoffed and added, “Do you know why Grandfather asked you all to come tonight?”

“Aren’t we here to have dinner? What else could there be?” Fiona frowned. She had her suspicions as to why Old Master Taylor asked them to come over and have dinner. Could it be that he had something to announce? She thought about it for some time but could not guess what was going on. She even thought that she had been imagining things.

Once Cecilia brought it up, however, it seemed that there was something going on so he asked them to come over.

“I’m not telling you guys now. Go in and you’ll soon find out!” Cecilia placed both hands behind her back and walked inside with her head slightly raised. “Let’s go. I’m going to marry into a good family soon. I’d say I’m much better off than some woman who married a bodyguard. I don’t need to work in the future. I only need to stay at home and be a full-time housewife. How good is that?”

“She’s getting married!” Fiona’s face turned dark as she saw Cecilia’s retreating form. “Cecilia really is marrying into the second-class aristocratic family, the Gold family. I thought that the young master from the Gold family was toying with her and wouldn’t marry her. I never thought he’d actually marry her!”

Fiona was slightly envious. “That’s a second-class aristocratic family, and it’s only natural she’s happy.

After all, she's marrying into a rich family, and our Taylor family has just entered the door of the second-class aristocratic family range. This Gold family has been a second-class aristocratic family for the longest time. The highlight of everything is that the Gold family has only one son. Once Cecilia marries into their family, she'd have access to their family's properties!"

She looked at Selena and sighed. "There's a saying that men are afraid of being in the wrong field of work, and women are afraid of marrying the wrong people. Had you not been so headstrong before, you won't need to face such humiliation. You could've married anyone like Young Master Wilson, Young Master Clark, or anyone else like them. You wouldn't have suffered for so many years, and sure as heck won't be shamed today!"No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 681-685

Chapter 681

"Mother, what are you talking about? I chose this myself, and I regret nothing. Just so you know, I feel that Jack is so much better than Young Master Clark and Young Master Wilson!" Irked by her mother's behavior, Selena rolled her eyes at Fiona and walked past her to get inside.

"Hmph!" Fiona looked at Jack, obviously displeased. Everything happened because Jack was incapable as a provider, and others had looked at their family with disdain. While their lives had changed for the better, they could have had that luxury and happiness even from back then.

Fiona brusquely walked inside, silently as she did. Andrew's lips curled into an awkward and sheepish smile as he patted Jack's shoulder. "Jack, don't take it too seriously. This is how she is. She's not a bad person; she's just hoping that Selena would have a good life."

Jack smiled bitterly and nodded. "Don't worry, Father-in-law, I won't let you guys down! I don't care that much about the Gold family or Clark family either!"

Jack's reply made the corners of Andrew's mouth twitched. He intended to comfort Jack and alleviate his mood, but he never thought that such proud words would come out in reply instead.

This disappointed Andrew; he felt that Jack was not down-to-earth enough. Jack just could not compete with others but he did not want to admit to it.

A heavy sigh escaped Andrew's lips before he walked toward the villa's entrance.

Eventually, Joan came closer to her son with a serene smile on her face. "Son, don't pay too much attention to this. As long as you've done your best, that's enough. Humans need to learn to be content. Your mother-in-law doesn't understand this and constantly wants to compare with other people."

"I understand, Mother." Jack nodded and they walked toward the entrance together.

The moment they arrived at the living area, they noted the many tables already set up. Apart from a rather large number of Taylors, members of the second-class aristocratic family—that was the Gold family—were here, most notably their master and young master.

"Jack, quickly. We've kept a place for you here!" Cecilia waved him over once she saw him come in last.

Jack's face slightly darkened after he caught on to what she was doing. If he was given a choice, he did not want to sit at that table. Old Master Taylor, Theodore Taylor, and the people from the Gold family were sitting on that table. Wasn't it obvious that Cecilia purposely asked him over so that she can humiliate him later?

Selena had already sat there, most probably the work of Cecilia.

"Jack, come over. There's still one seat left here!" The Old Master smiled at Jack.

The Taylor family was proud of themselves and managed to show-off themselves because of what Jack achieved during his 70th birthday. Apart from that, the birthday present Jack gifted him was worth 500 million, and this caused him to re-examine this son-in-law who married into his family.

Chapter 682

Jack merely wore an aloof smile as he walked over to Cecilia's table and sat on the empty seat next to Selena.

Once Jack sat down, the Gold family's young master, Kelly Gold smugly spoke, "Ah, so you're Jack? We went overseas for a trip some time ago and have just returned recently! I've heard quite a lot about you. You're the one who joined the forces, right? A son-in-law who married into his wife's family. You've been away for five years, no?"

On the other side, Old Master Gold's expression darkened as he glanced at Jack. "Old Master Taylor, this… This is the son-in-law who married into your family?"

"Yes, and he's been here for a month now!" Old Master Taylor nodded with a smile on his face.

The expression on Old Master Gold's face continued to darken, and he added, "We're here to discuss important matters today, and it's about Kelly and Cecilia's wedding. It's not so good for an outsider to sit here with us on the same table, don't you agree?"

"That's right, Old Master Taylor," the Head of the Gold Family chimed in. "I feel that the people sitting here need to be a member of the Taylor family. It isn't the best for a son-in-law who married into your family and is a younger generation to sit here, is it?"

Old Master Taylor never thought that the people of the Gold family would take such a thing to heart. With a small smile, he gently asserted, "Although Jack married into our family, he's considered as half a Taylor family member. I myself recognized his standing as a member of the Taylor family."

Kelly burst out laughing. "That's weird! I remember Cecilia telling me two months ago that Jack got Miss Selena from your family because he's drunk. If that's the case, what's the difference between him and a rapist? You guys accepted a rapist into your family and welcome him as your own? Your values moved me!"

Selena never thought Kelly would disrespect Jack so much. She could still reason with herself if they looked down at him and said he was a son-in-law married into her family, but it angered her when they equated him to a rapist!

The expression on Selena's face could easily rival the icy cold, and she had a matching smile as well. "Young Master Gold, may I know what proof you have when you say this? Don't listen to someone's baseless rumors. Does anybody know clearer than me, the person involved, about what happened that night?"

Selena glanced at Jack, who was beside her, and her expression lightened slightly. "I did things willingly on the night of my marriage. If I did it willingly, how can a petty person with a hidden agenda change that into a rapist story? Am I wrong?"

This angered Cecilia at that instant. "You…!" This damned Selena. Selena had the gall to call her a petty person with a hidden agenda!

"What's going on?" Stunned for a moment, Selena then smiled. "Cecilia, you don't look very happy. I said that this was said by someone. You won't jump to conclusions, would you?"

At this moment, Kelly started laughing once again. "Miss Selena, you're a really open person. I heard that you met Jack on the first day and married him on the second day. It surprised me that you slept with him on the night of your marriage and even gave birth to a daughter for him. Hey now, your relationship has improved so quickly."

Kelly took a rather dramatic pause before he disdainfully added, "However, as a woman, aren't you slightly unreserved?"

"Young Master Gold, you don't seem to be in the position to worry about this. Both of us fell for each other at first sight and we were married at that time. We were husband-and-wife at that time, so how was it wrong that we slept together?"

Jack chuckled as his eyes shifted to Cecilia. “No matter what, Selena and I were already married before we had our daughter. If this isn’t considered as being reserved, are girls who are pregnant before marriage considered as being reserved?”

Jack had long observed that Cecilia was pregnant; six weeks to be exact. If she did not get married soon, her pregnancy would be a glaring detail.

Chapter 683

This could be why the Gold family agreed to prepare for her and Young Master Gold to get married; she was with child. The Gold family’s future generation.

“Why… Why are you looking at me? I’m not pregnant!” Jack easily noticed the sliver of shock and guilt behind Cecilia’s eyes as she averted her gaze, turning to the side. “I’m not an easy woman!”

Jack chuckled at her comeback, and he smugly added, “You should be around six weeks pregnant. Being pregnant isn’t that much of a strange occurrence. It’s quite normal in this current society!”

“Cecilia, are you pregnant?” Old Master Taylor’s face darkened. Conceiving before marriage was not abnormal, merely a normal happening all around the world.

Still, Old Master Taylor was a man who highly preserved his dignity, and the Taylor family has just achieved the second-class aristocratic family title. If news about how the Taylor family’s girls got pregnant before they were married got publicized, the Taylor family’s value would deteriorate.

“Grandfather, he… He’s speaking nonsense. How would I not know if I’m pregnant or not?” Cecilia put up a strong bravado, but she was inwardly freaking out. It startled her how Jack could tell things so accurately just by looking at her and without even checking her pulse.

Even her parents did not know about her pregnancy. If Jack was making guesses, how did he manage to

guess so accurately?

Cecilia's father shot up from his seat as he furiously barked, "Don't just spew out nonsense, you brat! How can my daughter be someone like that?" Cecilia's father glared at Jack in all his fury. "You didn't even touch her hand or check her pulse. How can you simply say she's six weeks pregnant?"

"That's right. Don't talk nonsense!" Cecilia's mother got up from her seat, just as angry as her husband. "Although our family doesn't like to speak up, we can't be pushed or stepped on like a doormat. It's infuriating how a mere son-in-law married into the family could say whatever he likes!"

Jack was about to talk back when Fiona's face darkened, and she was basically staring daggers at Jack. "Jack, what did I say to you just now?!"

Jack was instantly silent. Fiona did tell him not to speak nonsense before he entered the door.

However, the situation was different. He could tank it if everyone was ridiculing him as he did not want to be like the others, but they were mocking Selena, his wife. This unsettled Jack to a great deal.

Ignoring Fiona, he directed his reply to Cecilia's father. "Other people might need to check her pulse and western doctors might need to check your daughter with machines, but I'm different. I can see your daughter's situation with my eyes only!"

Not wanting to be looked down by these people, Jack raised his chin slightly. "Let me just tell everybody the truth. I'm a medical god; a miracle-working doctor!"

"Yes! I'll have you know that Jack was the one who cured my leg!" Andrew chimed in, obviously pleased with Jack's work. "Jack's medical skills are very good. Not only that, but Sharon's obesity-like disease was also cured by Jack!"

Chapter 684

Andrew was displeased at how the Gold family was treating Jack.

Of course, he had looked down on Jack way back then, and he recalled the bitterness he held against this young man. Now, Jack had shown his worth, strength, and excellence.

It surprised him at how the Gold family was saying such mean things to him. He could not stomach that and decided to stand for Jack.

Cecilia smirked pompously after she heard this. “A miracle-working doctor? That’s really funny. How can a soldier call himself a miracle-working doctor? Your boasts are too much!”

“My thoughts exactly. Do you think that you’re the God of War Ethan Hays? Only a person like him dare address himself as a miracle-working doctor. He’s a well-recognized miracle-working doctor to boot!”

The Gold family master even said with a smile. “You just got lucky in treating your father-in-law’s leg and Sharon’s disease. At the very most, it means that your medical skills weren’t bad. Still, you have a long way to go before you can become a miracle-working doctor!”

Jack burst out laughing when he heard, a laugh filled with mirth and amusement before he settled down and replied, “To be honest, Ethan’s medical skills are good, but he’s my disciple, really. Most of the time, he asks me for guidance on medical skills!”

Young Master Gold nearly spurted the soup from his mouth. He laughed as though it was the most hilarious thing. “You’re amazing, young man! You’re really good. If you dare say that you’re number one in boasting, nobody dares admit to being number two!”

Old Master Gold turned to Old Master Taylor with a grin on his face. “Old Master Taylor, this son-in-law of yours is really refreshing to see, and luckily, the God of War isn’t here. If not, the matter of him addressing the God of War by his first name would land him in so much trouble.”

The head of the Gold Family smiled coldly and said, “Hey, hey! He’s not even shy or anywhere remotely abashed when he calls himself a miracle-working doctor! That’s the biggest takeout from this!”

“Jack, what are you talking about?” Stupefied, Selena discreetly tugged at Jack’s sleeve and signaled him to stop. It was fine if everybody thought that he was boasting. What would happen if what he so boldly claimed got out?

Enraged, Fiona had enough as she snapped, “Shut up, Jack! You constantly say whatever you like every single time. What kind of an existence is Ethan Hays, the God of War Hays? He’s excellent at both medicine and martial arts. He’s the most adored God of War. Even if his martial arts isn’t the best among the Nine Great Gods of War, his influence is the strongest. His position in everybody’s heart was the highest, and you’re here claiming you’re his master!”

Joan was also frightened by Jack’s words. She ran from her table—one that was next to theirs—when she realized Jack was starting to act out again. “Jack, what are you saying? You can’t make jokes like this!”

“Auntie, you don’t have to worry. Your son doesn’t seem too bad. At the very least, he’s very brave. If God of War Hays knew about this, being killed would be the best turnout. However, your son might have involved your entire family, and that’s…” Young Master Kelly trailed off with a grin.

“Mother, I’m telling the truth. It doesn’t matter if they don’t believe me!” Jack did not want to dive too much into details. He planned on telling the truth; that he was indeed Ethan Hays’ master. He never thought he would be met with this much opposition and ridicule.

“It’s great if you’re really a miracle-working doctor… But I still feel you’re a quack!” Cecilia even denied with all her might and added, “If you’re a miracle-working doctor, how would you simply say that I’m pregnant? I’m not pregnant!”

Chapter 685

Jack glanced at Cecilia apathetically, at her feeble attempt of a comeback. “Aren’t you afraid that you’d be struck by lightning if you lie without even blinking?”

“You…” Cecilia saw red in an instant. How dare he spoke to her in such a tone! He was increasingly daring.

Old Master Taylor reeled in shock as he glared at Jack “Don’t say things so simply, Jack!” Old Master Taylor then composed himself and wore a smile before turning to the other party. “Old Master Gold, you’ve left the country two months ago, and Jack had just come back one month ago. I suppose you might not understand him well!”

Old Master Gold nodded with a smile. “Yes, I don’t understand him well. I didn’t know he loves to boast!”

The corners of Zeus’s mouth twitched before he replied, “How should I say this? He’s quite well-versed medically, and there are times where he likes to boast. However, I believe that even if the God of War Hays comes here, he wouldn’t kill Jack. After all, he had been on the battlefield on our Daxia’s behalf and is a head commander.”

Old Master Taylor paused for a moment before he continued, “More importantly, Jack once saved the life of the Goddess of War, Lana Zechs. The Goddess of War wouldn’t let the God of War Hays kill Jack, right?”

Old Master Gold frowned after he heard this and blurted, “Wait! Is the Goddess of War also in our Eastfield?”

Old Master Taylor chuckled. “You’ve been out of the country for two months and have just returned from overseas, so you might not know what happened around this one month. Not only is the Goddess of War in Eastfield, but she freely came to my seventieth birthday party.”

“Really? She actually came?” came Old Master Gold’s surprised exclamation.

Understandably, Old Master Taylor became giddy as he shared this story. He poured a glass of wine for

Old Master Gold and they clinked their glasses together. “Come. Cheers! I’ll tell you all about it!”

Old Master Taylor soon told about how big a scene his birthday party was, and members of the Gold family listened rather attentively. After all, they had just returned and knew nothing of the occurrences that happened this month.

“Come here, Kylie. Eat more!” Selena placed some food for her daughter onto a plate as she listened on as well.

“I had no idea that the Goddess of War would give the luminous pearl she auctioned worth five hundred million to Jack,” Old Master Taylor concluded. “Jack is also very filial. He gave it to me on my seventieth birthday as my gift!”

Old Master Gold was envious when he heard this. “It seems that this son-in-law of yours is a stellar man. Although he’s only a head commander after five years, he saved the Goddess of War and this brought actual benefits for your family. Now, your family has even become a second-class aristocratic family. He’s a filial child, that’s for sure!”

“That’s right. Being filial is the most important quality for a person! Recently, I’ve placed the luminous pearl beside my pillow every day, and I feel like the quality of my sleep has improved. I used to wake up in the middle of the night or suffer from insomnia, but I don’t have such symptoms now,” beamed Old Master Taylor with a smile. “I now feel that my health and spirit is so much better!”

Old Master Gold’s eyes brightened after he heard this. “Really? Now that’s truly miraculous. Can you show it to us so that we can learn something new?”No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 686-690

Chapter 686

”Sure!” Old Master Taylor obviously wanted to show-off. He went upstairs and soon came down with the luminous pearl. He then placed it in front of Old Master Gold.

Cecilia stopped speaking when she saw that nobody continued pinpointing Jack. After all, she was really pregnant, and Old Master Taylor would be unhappy if everybody knew this.

“Oh my, it’s really huge! I had no idea that there are luminous pearls of this size in the world! Everybody must be envious of you” Old Master Gold looked at the luminous pearl in the box with widened eyes. He had seen many luminous pearls but this was the first time he saw such a big one.

“the size doesn’t really matter. The most crucial point is its effect. I heard that it has the effect of prolonging one’s life. I hope that I can live an extra few more years with the help of this pearl. I feel like it really does what it says!” Old Master Taylor said with a smile. He even had a proud expression on his face.

“I really envy you! Why don’t we switch off the lights and take a look at its lustrousness?” Old Master Gold could not help himself and said as he remembered something.

“Sure!” Old Master Taylor asked the workers to switch off the lights. The luminous pearl shone a very bright ray of light and everybody in the room was able to see the pearl without lights on.

“This is a precious treasure! It really is something we don’t see very often!” Old Master Gold loved it so much he did not want to let the luminous pearl go. He continued exclaiming “Old Master Taylor, you’ve really found a precious treasure. Let alone five hundred million. I estimate that this item is worth at least a billion.”

Old Master laughed and continued saying. “I heard that many first-class aristocratic families were fighting over this. However, nobody could confirm its effect so nobody dared to bet a higher price after it reached five hundred million. After all, they would have suffered a big loss if this thing didn’t have the effect it was said to have.”

“Yes, only someone like the Goddess of War would dare to bet on it with five hundred million without any apprehension!” Old Master Gold nodded.

He asked for the lights to be switched on before closing the box reluctantly and passed it to Old Master Taylor. “Although the Goddess of War Lana is a woman, she’s such a generous person! She actually gifted something that’s worth five hundred million to Jack!”

“after all, Jack saved her life before this. Compared to her life, five hundred million is nothing!” Old Master Taylor laughed out loudly as he was very happy.

Old Master Gold also said with a smile. “Come, let’s drink!”

After they had several drinks, Old Master Gold said, “By the way, Old Master Taylor, let’s talk about serious matters. We are here today to send betrothal gifts to the Taylor family. It’s not easy for your family to raise Cecilia until she’s reached adulthood. Hence, we’ve prepared eighty million as the betrothal gift!”

“Eighty million!” Cecilia’s parents were slightly happy after they heard this figure. Although they were also members of the Taylor family, they did not have that much money. They were able to have a comfortable life because they worked in the Taylor family’s companies where they get nice salaries and bonuses.

The amount of eighty million had really surprised them.

“Cecilia’s mother, you must accept this money from us. Apart from that, you don’t need to trouble yourself and think about returning us with gifts or other things. This money is for you to spend the rest of your lives with as you only have this one daughter!”

Chapter 687

The head of the Gold family took out a bank card and passed it to Cecilia’s mother with a smile.

Cecilia’s mother was extremely happy. She took the card and spoke with a smile. “This…this is too generous. I feel embarrassed to receive such a huge amount of betrothal gift!”

“Cecilia’s mother, you’ve raised Cecilia all these years into an adult and have done a good job. It’s not easy to raise someone into an adult with an honorable character. Our entire family is very satisfied with Cecilia!” The Head of the Gold family started laughing.

“That’s right. Cecilia is always very obedient. She also looks beautiful and has an honorable character. Apart from that, she’s a university student and had rejected many young masters who pursued her. In the end, she had her eyes on Young Master Gold and this might be their fate!” Cecilia’s mother placed the bank card into her pocket, glanced at Selena, and said with a smile. “It’s such a waste for the prettiest woman in our Taylor family to marry into a bad family. It seems that they only gave twenty million worth of betrothal gifts. A person’s choice is definitely the most important in one’s life.”

The head of the Gold family naturally understood the underlying meaning of what Cecilia’s mother was saying. He also said with a smile. “That’s right, that’s right… Isn’t the most important thing for a woman is to marry into a nice family? Once they are married to the correct person, they wouldn’t need to worry for the rest of their lives; if they aren’t married to the right person, they would have to suffer for the rest of their lives.”

Fiona’s facial expression darkened as these people were obviously saying that her daughter was not married into a nice family.

She felt slightly flustered as there was a huge difference when she thought about how Cecilia’s family had 80 million worth of betrothal gifts whereas Jack only gave her 20 million.

“Thank you, uncle!” Cecilia said happily.

“Hey, young lady, why are you still addressing me as your uncle?” The head of the Gold family adjusted his expression and purposely showed that he was unhappy.

“Oh! Thank you, Father!” Only then did Cecilia respond and immediately addressed him happily.

“that’s correct!” The head of the Gold family, Ezra Gold, started laughing loudly. He then said to Zeus, “Old Master Taylor, then it’s decided. Our next agenda is to discuss the dates of their marriage. Let’s choose a nice date and hold a grand wedding for this pair of newlyweds.”

“Sure, I don’t have any issues. Just let me know which day is more suitable, alright?” Zeus nodded. The Gold family people were really rich, and they could pay so much as Cecilia’s betrothal gift. He was quite satisfied that they expressed their sincerity with this.

“How about one month later?” Kelly said after thinking about it. “In this case, we would have more time to prepare as this is the most important thing in life and we need to make it as grand as possible.”

“I don’t think we need that much time! Why don’t we hold the wedding 25 days from today? Yes, that seems to be a good day!” Cecilia thought about it and said after she secretly glanced at Selena.

“That’s not so good, right? Isn’t that day Selena’s birthday?” Fiona soon remembered something and said with a frown. “Cecilia, it’s best if you change the date. Don’t hold both events on the same day.”

Chapter 688

”Change to another day? Why do I need to change my wedding to another day? Why doesn’t your daughter change it to another day?” Cecilia’s expression immediately turned cold after she heard this. She said unhappily, “I chose this date after much effort and thoughts. How can you ask me to simply change it?”

Fiona was not stupid and she realized that the other party was definitely doing this on purpose. She refuted, “That’s my daughter’s birthday. How can she simply change her date? You’re getting married. There’s no difference if you get married a month later or a few days earlier, right?”

“birthdays can be held several days earlier too. Why do I need to make way for her? Is my wedding not as important as her birthday?” It was natural for Cecilia to not want to change her wedding date. She even said, “Her birthday can be celebrated every year but my wedding is only held once. How can I simply change the date?”

Old Master Taylor also frowned and said to Cecilia after he thought about it. “Cecilia, why don’t you slightly change the dates? It’s alright to have the wedding one or two days earlier or later, right? The most crucial thing is, Jack had already advertised Selena’s birthday and everybody in Eastfield already knows about it. He can’t change the date if you ask him to so suddenly!”

“Oh, yes. I almost forgot. We saw the advertisement all over the place on our way here and the advertisement said that he was going to hold a birthday party that stirs the city. I almost forget about it if Old Master Taylor hadn’t mentioned it. This birthday party is being held by your son-in-law for Selena?” The Head of the Gold family realized what was going on. He said with a cold smile. “city stirring? What a tone! I’ll see how you can stir up the city. If you don’t have at least one to two billion or even more, how can you stir up the city?”

“Father, this person is boasting. I think that he has spent lots of money to do the advertisement. How much more does he have? When the time comes, don’t cause embarrassment to the family. That would be a lot of talk and no actions.” Cecilia directly said to the head of the Gold family. “I really want to hold my wedding on that day.”

The head of the Gold family thought about it and said to Jack. “You’re Jack? How about this? I’ll pay whatever amount you paid as your advertisement fee and you give that day to me so I can hold my son’s wedding.”

Kelly also said with a despicable expression on his face. “That’s right. I’m getting married and this might be the only time I’m getting married. It has to be an extravagant event. Your event is just a normal birthday party so you don’t need to snatch the date with us, right?”

“Jack, how much did you spend? If you’ve spent thirty million, ask them for at least fifty million. After all, you still need to ask for payment for the damage to your mental health, right?” Fiona glanced at Jack and asked softly.

Jack smiled calmly, looked at the head of the Gold family, and said, “I’m sorry, Master Gold. I really don’t know how much money was spent so I don’t know how to answer you.”

Before the head of the Gold family could speak, Kelly had already stood up angrily. “Young man, don’t act stupid. You’ve done the advertisement but you don’t know how much you spent? Do you think that we’re stupid? You need to think carefully, if you really want to fight with me because of this, that means that you’re going against the current. Don’t regret whatever you did later on!”

“Young Master Gold, don’t get angry! Don’t get angry!” Fiona was surprised when she saw Kelly getting angrier. She secretly felt that this son-in-law was too disappointing. He actually caused trouble again. Before they came in, she had already ordered Jack to speak less and eat more. She had no idea that Jack would still offend the people of the Gold family.

Chapter 689

She said with a smile. “Jack doesn’t have much money with him. The most he has is seven to eight million and the advertisement should have taken him at least two to three million. Hence, he’s only left with five to six million. He wouldn’t be able to do anything extravagant. An advertisement is actually a boastful act. He doesn’t have other disadvantages apart from liking to boast.”

“He only spent two to three million, right? How about this, I’ll pay you five million and the rest is your compensation. So that the others would not say that our Gold family bullied you guys!” Kelly hugged his arms in front of his chest and looked down condescendingly and arrogantly.

“Sure, that’s agreed then. We’ll change to another day.” Fiona nodded continuously and agreed to it.

However, Young Master Gold said, “Whatever you say doesn’t mean anything. I want your son-in-law to nod and whatever he says, counts. Got it? After all, he’s the one who spent the money and did the advertisement.”

Jack shrugged his shoulders. “Truth be told, I really don’t know how much I’ve spent. However, I don’t want your five million because I don’t plan to change the date. I’ve set the date and that is my wife’s birthday.”

“Jack, are you dumb? You’re going to earn so much money, can’t we move the date one or two days earlier?” Fiona was furious because of what Jack said, and she stomped her feet on the spot.

“Mother, don’t worry. I won’t change the date.” Jack directly looked at Kelly and did not want to back away.

Old Master Taylor thought about it and persuaded, “Jack, I can understand how you feel. After all, this is the first birthday you’re celebrating with Selena after you’ve returned from the battlefield. It’s natural for you to want to give Selena the best and leave a good impression. However, whatever that’s happening today is different. This is Cecilia’s wedding. When you compare it, a wedding is definitely more important than a birthday.”

Selena sighed inwardly when she saw how Old Master Taylor helped persuade Jack. She said to Jack, “Jack, why don’t we let it go. Mine’s just a normal birthday and this is Cecilia’s wedding. There’s a huge difference between both as this is her marriage. We don’t need to hold our event on the same day as her’s.”

Cecilia and Kelly looked at each other. Both of them had a cold smile at the corners of their mouths. Even Selena softened when she’s faced with such huge pressure. They did not believe that Jack would continue to persist.

Apart from that, they’ve given Jack an extra few million. It was just a change of the dates, other people would have agreed to it early on.

Although the advertisements were carried out and it was slightly shameful if they brought forward the event. However, they were not the ones being embarrassed.

“Honey, this is your birthday. Apart from that, the entire city knows about it. I’m not changing the dates.” Jack looked at Selena and said with a serious expression on his face. “Apart from that, we’ve agreed to this since long ago. When I was not here, it doesn’t matter if Cecilia steps on your head and bullies you. However, now that I’m back, I wouldn’t let you endure such suffering.”

Chapter 690

”What a character. You’re really a soldier, your bones are harder than anything else.” Kelly started laughing after he heard this. “Since you don’t want to change your dates and we don’t want that too. Then let’s do it on the same day. It’s actually not a big deal to hold both events on the same day, as long as you guys don’t regret it.”

The head of the Gold family also started laughing. “Since he doesn’t want money, we don’t need to continue persuading him. Our Gold family is also one of the best among all second-class aristocratic families. I believe that many people will come to my son’s wedding. At that time, some people will regret it!”

“that may not be the case. Master Gold, you need to think about it carefully. If you hold the wedding on the same day as us, the people regretting it might be you!” Jack smiled and said without much care.

“that’s quite fun. Let’s hold it on the same day. I want to see how you stir up the city then.” The head of the Gold family laughed coldly and looked confident.

Beside them, Cecilia stood up and said to the Taylor family members loudly. “Everybody in the Taylor family, I will only get married once in this lifetime. 25 days later would be the biggest day of my life. I believe that everybody would give me face, right? I hope everybody can come to my wedding and don’t miss it!”

One of the elders in the Taylor family immediately stood up. “Don’t worry, Miss Cecilia. That is your most important day so we would definitely be there.”

“Yes, marriages are definitely more important than birthdays. We will definitely attend it and drink with you.” Another middle-aged man also stood up and said.

Cecilia showed a triumphant expression after she heard this. She looked at Old Master Taylor and said, “Old Master, you won’t be absent from my wedding dinner, right? I need your blessing the most.”

“don’t worry. Grandfather will be there. I will definitely be there!” Old Master Taylor started laughing.

Although he understood that Cecilia was doing this on purpose to bully Selena but he could not blame it on Cecilia if Jack insisted.

It could only be said that Jack was too strong-headed. He wanted to compete with Cecilia on something like this.

“Sigh, this is so f*cking annoying!” Fiona was incredibly angry. She directly sat down, lowered her head, and focused on eating.

However, the food did not taste as good as previously.

“Thank you, Grandfather!” Cecilia was extremely happy as if she had won. She sat down happily and poured herself some wine. “Come, today is a great day. Let’s enjoy a glass of drink.”

“Sure, congratulations!” The other members of the Taylor family also raised their glasses and started drinking.

The head of the Gold family looked around him and soon frowned. “This is weird, are we two people short?”

“are you talking about Ben and Ivan?”No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 691-695

Chapter 691

Old Master Taylor roared in laughter and said, “I already called Ivan and he said he was quite busy as he had to work overtime.”

At this point, he looked at Andrew Taylor and said, “Oh yes, Andrew, why is Ben not here? I feel like I haven’t seen him in these few days.”

Andrew smiled indifferently and said, “Dad, Ben opened an internet cafe just a few days ago. Of course, he would be busy. He hasn’t been home in these two days.”

Grandpa Taylor smiled satisfactorily and said, “This kid finally knows how to make money. Looks like he’s finally grown out of his games too!”

Hearing Grandpa Taylor praising his son, Fiona smiled and said, “Yeah, our Ben is quite hardworking. He used to be young and raw, making mistakes here and there but now he’s really grown out of it.”

“Oh, I heard you guys hired ten bodyguards, and that all of them are beautiful and long-legged.”

Cecilia looked at Jack and said, “Let me guess. Jack was the one who hired them? You hiring bodyguards or going for a pageant?”

Kelly Gold heard and immediately said in a haughty voice, “This is so typical. Some men put on such a ‘good boy’ act when they have no money. When they get rich, they suddenly become ‘bad boys’ and even visit the spa for the women.”

At this point, he continued as a matter of fact, “But some men are different. They secretly flirt with chicks, bodyguards… Miss Selena, you are really pretty, but even pretty girls will get old, and we know all men love young girls.”

Cecilia said, “Yeah, Selena, you need to be careful. Your husband doesn’t seem to be an honest man. He hired ten beautiful and young bodyguards. You’re still pretty young now, but once you hit thirty, you will just age rapidly from there.”

“don’t worry. I have faith in my man.”

Selena laughed and said, “Jack told me that these women bodyguards will be able to look after my mother and his mother. If they want to go shopping, it will be more convenient for them to have women bodyguards with them. There’s really no other intention.”

“I think those are just ten beautiful vases that don’t have much utility. I mean, how can beautiful girls be of any use? I’m guessing a certain someone is spending money and sneaking around.”

The head of the Gold family laughed cooly.

“Vases? You’re really getting ahead of yourself.”

Jack looked really unhappy. Those ten beautiful girls were not hired from just any security company. They were all decorated war heroes who had sacrificed a lot for the country. Some of them were even Majors. He felt that a grave injustice was being done to these women warriors, as they were being described as vases.

“Oh, you’re unhappy!”

Kelly looked at Jack’s unhappy face and wanted to poke fun at him. He said, “Since you’re not happy, then why don’t we pit our bodyguards against each other?”

“If you’re not fussed about embarrassing yourself, I’m happy to oblige!” Jack raised his wine glass to his lips and sipped it slowly.

“Alright, let’s start a match. Why don’t we gamble on the outcome too? How about that? Do you dare to take a bet?” Kelly thought about it and said coyly.

Chapter 692

Jack could not even believe that a gamble was at stake. He said, “Of course, as to how much we should

bet, why don't you suggest it, since it's all your idea."

Kelly heard and laughed cooly. He said, "Good, then I won't quote such a high price-in case you lose, you can't say that I am bullying you and you can't pay up! Since you still have a couple of millions, let's bet ten million per round?"

"Ten million per round? Isn't that too much? If we lose a few rounds, then what do we do? We still need money for our daughter's wedding dinner!"

"Yeah, that's a bit much, Kelly. It's not good to gamble such a large amount. Let's just do a hundred thousand per round." Joan was so shocked that she had stood up by the table and quipped.

"aunty, why are you even joking around? How will ten million even hurt me? Ten million isn't even appropriate for someone of my status."

Kelly laughed cooly and said, "Don't forget, it's your son who asked me to pick the sum. A hundred thousand is way too little. What if someone loses a limb or an eye in the fight? That's not a small matter. How can you ask for only a hundred thousand?"

"Kelly, you want to beat my ladies to death?" Jack laughed. He was not stupid and he was able to read between the lines.

"Oh no, don't misunderstand me. I'm just saying that this is a match of great warriors. It's not unheard of to die in fights, is it not?"

Kelly laughed and looked at Jack. He continued, "Don't tell me you have no faith in your beautiful bodyguards?"

"You're right. These matches should not be taken lightly. Everyone, just try your best then."

Jack picked up the phone and made a call.

At this moment, Orchid and the other eight bodyguards were strolling and chatting in the Villa's Garden.

"Sigh, I'm so bored. All our bosses are out for a meal. They don't need us again. It seems like we can only go for a stroll and rest up tonight." One of the beautiful ladies said softly.

"Isn't our life pretty good? We don't need to do much and receive a monthly salary. Most importantly we can see the Supreme Warrior! How lucky are we to have the chance to be his family bodyguards." Another lady spoke of Supreme Warrior with a sweet smile.

"Remember, don't spew nonsense. Someone could overhear us. Just call him boss, okay?" Orchid reminded the ladies instantly.

"Okay okay, I know. I checked if there was anyone around us before saying that."

The lady smiled, her dimples showing on the side. She was really attractive.

At this moment, Orchid's phone rang. She looked at the caller gleefully and instantly received the call.

As she hung up, she smiled. "Good news! We've got a task. Our boss is asking us to visit him. Apparently Mister Gold thinks we're just pretty vases. He wants us to spar with his bodyguard!"

"No way, can't believe people are still saying we're pretty vases. I'm so exasperated!" Another bodyguard clenched her fists and said angrily, "Let us show them what we've got."

Chapter 693

The nine bodyguards arrived at the Taylor family hall very swiftly.

“Since we’re done with our meal, let’s go! Let’s see whose bodyguards are better.” Seeing that everyone was done with their meal, the head of the Gold family stood up and said.

“Dad, just look at these ladies. They all have such supple and smooth skin, beautiful and fair long legs. How can they compare to our family bodyguards?”

Kelly looked at Orchid and the group and furrowed his brow. He said, “That’s weird. Why are there only nine? I thought you had ten bodyguards?”

Orchid looked at Kelly and said cooly, “Elaine went to take care of Ben, that’s why there are only nine of us.”

“Ah what a shame, well looks like we’re missing out on ten million!” Kelly said breathily.

“Ten million?” Orchid and her group looked perplexed.

Jack walked before them and said, “Mister Gold doesn’t look highly upon you ladies. He thinks you’re all just pretty faces and I’ve hired you to wait on me. I think you should make him swallow his words!”

Jack said, “When the time comes, show him what you’ve got. They don’t plan to go soft on you, so you shouldn’t as well. Beat them to death if you wish.”

“Got it!” Orchid and the ladies nodded. They felt an injustice bubbling inside. It was really unfair that they were looked down upon just because they were beautiful. If only people knew what their capabilities truly were and if only they knew how many enemies had died under their watch!

Everyone headed to an empty piece of land outside the villa.

“Nine of our men, go forward. Who wants to fight with these ladies first? They’ll be begging you for mercy in a bit. If they don’t beg for their lives, kill them off.” Kelly smiled and said cooly.

“Come, I can take on two of them single-handedly!” A bulky man who looked around two meters tall boasted loudly.

“How can these women be good fighters? I think they wouldn’t last ten seconds if each of us took one on at a time.” Another man stood up and said. His clothes were tattered and old, but his spirits were high.

Fiona felt slightly worried. These bodyguards were hired by Jack, but within these two days, she had become quite close to them. If anything were to happen to any of them, she would be regretful.

She walked forward and said to Kelly, “Mister Kelly, this is just a game of sparring. If you guys lose the bet, you don’t need to actually kill them right? Bodyguards are also people.”

Kelly smiled cooly in reply, “I didn’t say kill them. I merely asked them to learn from each other and spar. I mean, anything could happen in a fight, why blame me?”

“aunty, the world is a dog eat dog world. Survival of the fittest. If you’re so merciful, just go be a nun.”

One of the bodyguards from the Gold family stood up and roared in laughter.

Chapter 694

“You…”

Fiona was really angry, but she held herself back as she considered Gold’s background. She retreated, fuming.

Jack did not say much. He looked at Orchid and the ladies and smiled, “All the best, I’ll buy you guys a meal when you win.”

“Really? That will be amazing, thanks boss!” Orchid and the ladies smiled.

One of the ladies walked in front and jostled her fists at the men. “Who first?”

“Let me go at it! I love this scene. What a nice body figure you have, good breasts and bum.” A tan man laughed and walked forward. He almost salivated, “Pretty girl, you’re going to be begging for your life later. If you beg for your life and I don’t kill you, how will you repay me? After all, I am a man who treats women right.”

The lady looked at him and smiled cooly, “Well, you can also beg me for your life. If you beg, I won’t kill you.”

“Max, you better win this okay? I am betting ten million on each of you!” Kelly reminded the men from the sidelines.

“Don’t worry, its just a few women, how can this be difficult…”

The man had a solid and large build. He took a big step forward and tried to grab the girls. At this moment, the woman initiated a few kicks. It happened so fast, she kicked him twice.

Max did not expect the woman to be so light-footed. Her strength was beyond his expectations. After experiencing two consecutive kicks, he could not stand straight and almost fell. He took a few steps back.

At this moment, the woman jumped and landed a fist on his face.

Max was seeing stars. He fell on the floor and passed out.

“No way, he fainted!”

The other Gold bodyguards saw the scene and were dumbfounded. Max was really strong. They never expected him to pass out even before he could throw a punch.

“Dang it, we might actually lose!”

The woman walked forward and gave Max two more kicks before she walked back to her group.

“No way, we…lost?”

Kelly saw this and his face distorted. He did not think Jack’s bodyguards would even be a match for them. But looking at how things were progressing, he might actually lose the next nine rounds. At that moment, he might not only have to give a few million to Jack, but he was also worried that he could not come up with the money in time and might embarrass himself. Unexpectedly, the Gold family had already lost in the first round. And what a bad loss!

“Mister Gold, look at your bodyguards. It’s fine, you have eight more chances.” Jack glanced at Kelly and smiled cooly.

“Hmph, that was just one round. I think we only lost because we underestimated the strength of your bodyguards. Don’t worry, if I win the next eight rounds, you owe me seventy million.”

Kelly’s face froze. He looked at Jack and said, “I’m afraid to embarrass you if you can’t even cough up seventy million.”

“Don’t worry. It just so happens that I got my pay today. I even got a bonus. I will be able to pay for this

if I lose.” Jack said.

Chapter 695

“You…you got your pay?” Fiona heard and immediately, her eyes sparkled. This was Jack’s first month’s salary and that would be twenty million.

However, her face sank immediately. She said, “So what if you have gotten your salary. The money hasn’t been with you for long and you might be losing it!”

“Mother, don’t jinx it. You have to believe in what the ladies are capable of!”

Selena was just a bystander but she had started to feel nervous. However, she chose to believe in Jack and support his decision.

“Motherf****r, let me have a go at it!” Another bodyguard stepped out from Mister Gold’s pack of bodyguards.

“Orchid, let me do it!” Another adorable looking lady, part of the Taylor family bodyguards walked in front and got ready to spar with him.

“Little miss, you look so cute. I wonder how long you’d cry for after getting punched by me.” taunted the bodyguard as he saw the lady.

Truth be told, the adorable looking lady did indeed give off a very innocent and harmless look. It was not surprising to see that others could not take her seriously.

“Nero, stop fooling around. Max lost because he underestimated them.”

Kelly reminded Nero instantly. He could not afford to lose this round-it would be too embarrassing! If he lost two rounds consecutively, it would really prove that his bodyguards are not capable.

“Don’t worry, I will have no mercy.”

Nero laughed nonchalantly and rushed toward her. He moved at lightning speed and appeared in front of the lady. He raised his fist and threw a punch at her.

Kelly saw this masterful display and looked really satisfied. He thought, ‘The lady would not even have the time to make a move! She would be scared to death at his speed. This time, we will win!’

The attack did not perturb the lady at all. She reacted fast.

Their fists met and a loud sound exploded. The force was strong and the lady stepped back to stabilize her posture.

Comparing both their strengths and sizes, it was obvious that Nero was at a disadvantage.

“No way, don’t tell me Nero won’t be able to win?”

“Yeah, this lady looks like she’s skin and bones. How would she possess such strength?”

The Gold family bodyguards looked dumbfounded.

If the first bodyguard lost, that could be accepted as an accident. However, if the mistake were to repeat itself twice, it would not be passable as an accident anymore. They would just have to accept the obvious fact that these beautiful ladies were in fact, pretty capable.

Nero felt embarrassed for being thrown backward. He rushed for her and yelled, “I will kill you!”

“Feeling angry?”

The lady felt the murderous vibes coming from her opponent. Her brows furrowed and her eyes started to glisten, feeling the same fury in her heart, ready to defeat her opponent.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 696-700

Chapter 696

In the beginning, Jack’s bodyguards did not have any murderous intent. They just wanted their opponents to lose. However, as they felt the rage coming from their opponents, they too felt a similar rage to annihilate them.

‘This man dares to kill me”, she thought, “I will have no mercy.’

Nero ran toward her with both fists clenched, he threw two consecutive punches with a left jab and right hook, giving off a roar as he faced her.

The lady’s posture straightened and she dodged her opponent. She kicked her left leg and dodged to her right, making a sudden jump onto the back of the man.

Her thighs gripped the shoulders of her opponent and she had his head in a deadlock. She twisted his head.

“Crack!”

A crisp sound rang. The Gold family bodyguard’s neck snapped.

She jumped down from his body. The eyes of the man still looked surprised as he fell on to the floor, splashing the mud and soil around.

“Nero!”

A Gold family bodyguard witnessed the scene as his eyes welled up in tears. He never imagined his good buddy would face such a fate.

“Mister Gold. I am sorry to say that I’ve won another round.” Jack laughed and looked at Kelly.

Kelly’s expression soured. He began to grind his teeth and said, “Did you bring out the best fighters first? My best fighters are yet to come.”

Jack smiled bitterly and said, “To be honest, I don’t really know what they are all capable of because it’s my first time witnessing them in battle. However, I believe their skills are all really not bad.”

“Hmph, let’s go for round three!”

Mister Gold did not care to hear Jack finish. He just wanted to win one round so that he would not embarrass himself too badly.

“Mister Gold, I think you should just stop and let this go. If we go on, you might lose a few more bodyguards.” Zeus Taylor thought about it and said from the crowd.

After all, the Gold family was one man down. If this continues, the other bodyguards might feel resentment toward the Taylor family. He was afraid that they would want to fight to death.

It was not about whose family would lose a bodyguard-they would not be losing money. These warriors have all been groomed and trained for years. It would be a devastating loss.

“old man, are you afraid of losing? I have lost my men and how dare you say you want to end this? Are you afraid that my best fighters are soon to come? I have two bodyguard leaders who have not even started yet.”

Kelly laughed. Even if Zeus was his senior, he did not care for respecting him anymore.

“Yes, old man, we can’t let it go now that we’ve started. Since we’ve all already agreed, let’s continue. Our Gold family folks are willing to stomach any losses hopefully, you have the same appetite.” The head of the Gold family said seriously.

“Alright then!” Zeus had no other option but to nod and smile bitterly. He said, “I just feel like we’re all going to be family, and we shouldn’t fight over such matters.”

The head of the Gold family laughed and said, “Don’t worry, just treat this as our post-dinner entertainment. This petty matter wouldn’t affect the bond between our family.”

Zeus smiled resignedly, “Well, as long as you think that!”

Round three was about to begin.

Chapter 697

This time, the Gold family presented a man who was two meters tall. His strength would definitely surpass the two men before him.

Even then, after two to three minutes of battle, the Taylor family bodyguards managed to kill him off.

“We’ve won three rounds. I’m afraid we might win all ten rounds.”

Jack looked at Cecilia Taylor and said, “Cecilia, you haven’t married into their family. You should still be part of the Taylor family right?”

Cecilia didn’t quite get what Jack was trying to imply by that question. She batted him an eye and said, “Nonsense, of course, I am part of the Taylor family.”

“Then, do you wish for the Taylor or the Gold family to win?” Jack suddenly asked with a laugh.

The corners of Cecilia’s mouth twitched slightly. She thought that Jack was a little punk trying to make her life difficult by asking this question. She was in between a rock and a hard place now-whichever answer would get her into trouble.

“I wouldn’t know the answer to these things. I think it is so hard to tell who is going to win.” Cecilia laughed flippantly and gave a non-answer.

“Who’s next?”

Round four was about to begin. A Taylor family bodyguard volunteered herself.

“I’ll do it!” A tall and thin Gold family bodyguard walked in front and said angrily, “We’ve lost two men. Pretty girl, I will annihilate you and avenge my brothers.”

“I don’t think you’re capable.” The female bodyguard laughed at her opponent.

Very soon, the battle began. Moments later, the Gold family bodyguard was also killed by the Taylor family bodyguard.

The entire Gold family's facial expressions darkened.

Every single round did not seem to harm the Taylor family. Even their main bodyguards had been defeated.

Nine rounds later, other than the first bodyguard that had fainted, all eight Gold family bodyguards had been killed.

"Alright, the competition is now over. Thanks for all your effort. You ladies better head home and get some rest. You don't need to stand guard for the night. I'll take you all for lunch tomorrow." Jack stepped forward and looked at Orchid and the ladies satisfactorily. He added, "Oh, tomorrow get Elaine to come and eat with us."

"Alright, thanks boss!"

Orchid and the ladies looked really happy and shook his hand. They left.

The entire Gold family fell into silence. They could not believe that they had lost all nine rounds and ended up with eight dead bodyguards-even their two team leaders were dead. This was an embarrassing display.

"Mister Gold, now that you have lost, you won't go back on your promises of ninety million, will you?" Jack laughed and asked Kelly.

"Ninety million is nothing, Mister Gold will definitely keep his words."

Fiona was so happy at the thought of ninety million. She would have burst out laughing in glee if not for the Gold family's presence.

Chapter 698

“that’s right. Gold family will keep to our word and pay our dues. It’s just ninety million-give us your bank account number!” Kelly held back the anger in his heart and said with a laugh.

“Jack, just let this go.” Zeus could not resist but to suggest.

After all, Cecilia was about to marry Mister Gold. The opponents would be family soon. To kill their soon to be family’s bodyguards was already bad enough. To pursue the ninety million might add to their anger and offended Mister Gold. This could affect the relationship between both families.

Zeus had kept silent before. After all, he had already said not to continue the matches earlier and was refused by the Gold family. He had maintained his silence until now.

“I wouldn’t mind letting this go, but I think Mister Gold is someone who wants to pay his dues. Otherwise, I wouldn’t have heard such good things about Mister Gold’s character and reputation.”

Jack laughed and pretended to put on an unsatisfied face.

“Give me your bank account now-ninety million is small money!” the corner of Kelly’s mouth twitched as he said cooly.

Next to Jack, Fiona’s eyes were shining at the thought of money. He said bitterly, “Mother, where is your card? Pass your account number to Mister Gold. I forgot to bring my wallet out and can’t remember my account number.”

“Me? Good, good, good, let me give it to you now!”

Actually, Fiona had taken out her card earlier. With so many pairs of eyes on her, she was holding onto her card cautiously, as she did not want them to think she was greedy. Now that Jack had offered her

card, she felt so happy at her good fortune-to think that ninety million was coming to her-what a windfall!

“Alright, I’ll go now. Master Taylor, the wedding is going to be in twenty-five days. You all had better show up.” Mister Gold said after transferring the money.

“Of course!” Zeus smiled awkwardly. He could see that the Gold family was clearly unhappy despite their courteous words.

“Master Gold, I’m afraid to trouble you but you should also remove all these dead bodies.” Jack reminded.

Gold family was already angry. To hear Jack purposely remind them of the dead bodies pissed them off even more. They looked at him furiously and left with the bodies.

“Jack, didn’t you think you were being too harsh on them?” Zeus said to Jack unhappily.

“I don’t think so. They were the ones who called for a match and called my bodyguards useless. Furthermore, it was their bodyguard who asked for a fight till death-why should they blame me for this?”

Jack said nonchalantly, “If they really want to blame it on something, they should just blame it on their rotten luck to have underestimated my bodyguards.”

Chapter 699

“Okay, fine, we’re all one family. I don’t think they will take this to heart for a few bodyguards.” Zues said, “I’ve already advised them against it, their family insisted on competing with us-they shouldn’t entirely blame Jack for this.”

“But, dad…”

Zeus still looked unhappy-he was a little afraid of the Gold family. “But what? The Taylor family is no longer some third class family. We are a second class family. Gold family is also a second class family. We’re on equal footing and you shouldn’t be afraid.”

Master Taylor said and looked at Jack. “Jack, although they were the ones who started the fight, you should also be more cautious in the future. They are going to be our family. We should make an effort to maintain a good relationship.”

“Don’t worry, I have plans!” Jack smiled. He looked at the time and said, “Alright, we need to go back and rest. We’ll come and visit you next time when we are free.”

Jack and the rest left the Taylor family and returned to their private villas.

As they entered the door, Fiona said, “Jack, you gave the Taylor family only twenty million in dowry. Look at the Gold family-they gave Cecilia eighty million in dowry. I think my Selena is much better than Cecilia. You can’t do much worse than them.”

“Mother, what are you trying to say?”

Selena got a little upset at this. She could not help but glare at her mother. She knew that Fiona had no plans to give the ninety million back to Jack.

“Why do you care? I think I am right! My precious daughter is more beautiful and well mannered than her. My daughter is more clever and capable too.”

Fiona glanced at Selena haughtily.

Jack understood what she really meant and said, “Mother, can you hang on to the ninety million for me? Let’s consider that as Selena’s dowry. You’re right, Selena’s dowry can’t be lesser than Cecilia.”

Fiona could not contain her glee. She could not believe her windfall from just dinner.

“Don’t worry! It’s not a gift to me. It’s Selena’s dowry.”

Jack smiled bitterly. He knew that Fiona would be unhappy if he did not give the money to her and would even blame him for offending the Gold family. If a little money could help her let go of what had happened, he would gladly offer it up.

Furthermore, he felt that he owed the Taylor family much more. Ninety million was nothing to him.

“Jack, are you sure you want to give this to mother? If you give it to her, will we have enough money for my birthday party? You only have a few million. I wouldn’t mind on usual occasions, but your advertisements are everywhere-the entire city knows about the party. If it’s not as grand as they imagined, we would be the laughing stock for everyone.”

Selena looked concerned and said, “I think what you have is roughly the same as what you won earlier.”

“My love, don’t worry about these matters. Leave the money talk to me. A few million is small money.”

Jack looked at Selena feeling worried and his heart softened. He was aware that Selena did not care much for the party-he knew that she just did not want him to appear like a fool and be looked down on by everyone.

Chapter 700

“Yes, Jack is so right! This is just small money. What is it to give it to his mother-in-law?”

Fiona was over the moon. She had already begun thinking about how to spend the money and did not really care if Jack had offended the Gold family.

“Alright, let’s sleep. I need an early night in.”

Fiona laughed and went into the villa with Andrew.

“How can you say ninety million is small money?”

Selena sounded like she was not sure if she should laugh or cry. She took Kylie’s hand and made her way inside. “Jack, why don’t we scale down my birthday celebration? I don’t care if we look like fools. I don’t think we should waste money. I’m just so worried that you have prepared so many tables, but there might not be a huge crowd.”

“don’t worry, there will definitely be a huge crowd! After all, this shook up the whole city-we need to keep this up!”

Jack laughed and held Selena’s hand. He said, “Let’s go, my dear, you take a good rest and leave it to me.”

“Okay! I believe in you!” Selena nodded.

…

Meanwhile, the Gold family had just arrived home after half an hour’s drive. The other bodyguards disposed of the dead bodies.

“This live-in son-in-law of the Taylor family is so annoying. He shows us no respect!” Kelly thought of the drama earlier and gripped his fists, feeling the anger bubbling in his heart.

Even the Taylor family head had said to let the money go. He could not believe that Jack would dare to insist on the ninety million.

The Gold family head smiled bitterly, “Son, you should remember that ninety million is nothing for us. It is also nothing to them since they are also a second class family.”

He paused and continued, “However, Jack and his little family would consider it to be big money. It would be enough to cover half a year’s worth of salary-how could he reject such a large sum of money?”

“But, the head of the Taylor family even said not to take it. For him to do that, isn’t that a demonstration of disrespect toward us?”

Kelly still felt unhappy.

“this money is not for Taylor’s family head. It is for Jack. Master Taylor was just all talk, it’s normal.”

The head of the Gold family laughed, “Jack must be dirt poor. It is not surprising that he is greedy for money.”

At this moment, Master Gold finally said, “I never expected all the ten beauties to be great fighters. Any one of them can beat our bodyguards, and even our bodyguard team leads.”

“Yeah, it definitely won’t be easy to kill Jack.” Kelly continued.